



# The Belo Herald

Newsletter of the Col. A. H. Belo Camp #49

And Journal of Unreconstructed Confederate Thought

**February 2015**

This month's meeting features a special presentation:

**Top Overall SCV Recruiter Kyle Sims  
Recruiting for the SCV**



The Belo Herald is an interactive newsletter. Click on the links to take you directly to additional internet resources.

## Col. A. H. Belo Camp #49

Commander - Mark Nash  
1<sup>st</sup> Lt. Cmdr. - David Hendricks  
Adjutant - Stan Hudson  
Chaplain - Rev. Jerry Brown  
Editor - Nathan Bedford Forrest



Contact us: [www.belocamp.com](http://www.belocamp.com)  
[Belocamp49@hotmail.com](mailto:Belocamp49@hotmail.com)  
<http://www.facebook.com/BeloCamp49>

Follow us on **Twitter** at [belocamp49scv](https://twitter.com/belocamp49scv)

Texas Division: <http://www.scvtexas.org>

National: [www.scv.org](http://www.scv.org)  
<http://1800mydixie.com/>  
<http://www.youtube.com/user/SCVORG>

Commander in Chief Barrow on **Twitter** at [CiC@CiCSCV](https://twitter.com/CiC@CiCSCV)

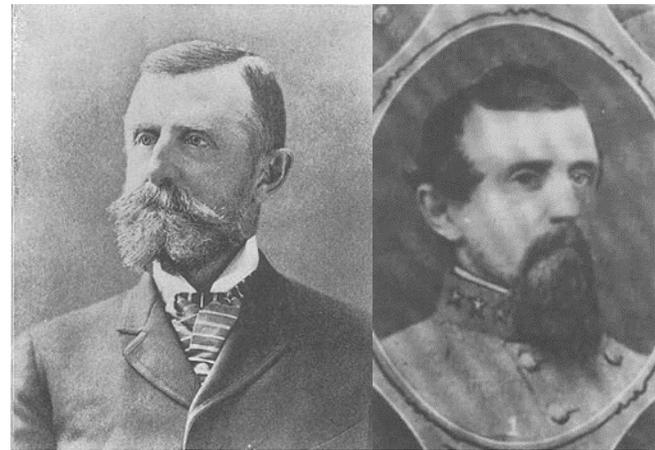
*Our Next Meeting:*

**Thursday, February 5<sup>th</sup>: 7:00 pm**

**La Madeleine Restaurant**  
3906 Lemmon Ave near Oak Lawn, Dallas, TX

**\*we meet in the private meeting room.**

All meetings are open to the public and guests are welcome.



**Have you paid your dues??**

Come early (6:30pm), **eat**, fellowship with other members, learn your history!



**"Everyone should do all in his power to collect and disseminate the truth, in the hope that it may find a place in history and descend to posterity." Gen. Robert E. Lee, CSA Dec. 3<sup>rd</sup> 1865**



# COMMANDER'S REPORT



Dear Compatriots:

2015 is officially underway, the last year of the sesquicentennial celebration of the War Between The States. In February 1865, our ancestors were pressed from every direction, but not crushed in spirit. Against mounting odds, they continued to give their all right up to the last, many of them paying the ultimate price. Those who made it home that year did not regard themselves as 'losers,' they held their heads high knowing that their Cause was just. It is easy for folks today to garner the designation of 'hero,' but these men were true heroes indeed.

It makes me reflect on why I joined the SCV, and I hope causes you to reflect as well. We have a good time together as a band of brothers at our meetings and events. I hope in 2015 we can deepen that bond and I encourage you to attend as many events as you can. But that is not why I joined. We also learn a lot about the true history of the War and the South. This educational aspect of the SCV is vitally important since few others are telling our side of the story. I call your attention to the Stephen Dill Lee Institute in Dallas this coming weekend (February 6-7) as a great opportunity for those who are in this for the history.

But the real reason we exist, and the reason I joined, is to honor the memory and the service of my ancestor. He was a brave American. I will never forget the first time I stood at his grave in Hollywood Cemetery in Richmond - an unmarked grave in a line of unmarked graves. Men who had been largely forgotten over time. As we say in the grave dedications giving full Confederate honors, when they ask, 'who speaks for these men?' we proudly answer 'we do!' If you have never visited the grave of your ancestor, I encourage you to do that in this sesquicentennial year of the War and salute him and thank him for his service.

We are back at our normal stomping grounds at La Madeleine this Thursday. I hope to see all of you there as one of the top recruiters for the SCV nationally, Kyle Sims, speaks to us.

Deo Vindice,

Mark Nash, Commander

[marktnash@msn.com](mailto:marktnash@msn.com)

954-608-1684

VISIT OUR HOME ON THE WEB

[WWW.BELOCAMP.COM](http://WWW.BELOCAMP.COM)

Camp News and  
Resources



CONFEDERATE STATES OF AMERICA



# 1<sup>ST</sup> LT. COMMANDER'S REPORT



Dear Compatriots,

I hope everyone remembered Confederate Heroes' Day this past January 19<sup>th</sup>. I believe that day was chosen in Texas, since it was Robert E. Lee's birthday (January 19, 1807). Wow, it seems like we just got together! I look forward to returning to La Madeleine and preparing for a great meeting this month.

Did everyone get a copy of the latest issue of the Confederate Veteran (January/February 2015)? Fantastic article in there about the Immortal 600. Did you also know that we have at least one of the 600 buried here in the Dallas area?

Speaking of our next meeting, I believe that we have a highly articulate speaker coming up this Thursday, February 5<sup>th</sup>. Please try to get to the meeting and enjoy the fellowship we share. We always have good times with the various speakers, article print-outs, book raffles and the MSM.

As I stated in last month's column, I initially put off joining the SCV. Today I have no doubts or second thoughts about my membership in this organization. Almost daily/weekly things unfold before me that strengthen that decision as it appears revisionist history keeps attempting to advance.

So years later, I hope it can be said for each one of us, "***Decori decus addit avito***".

Deo Vindice,

David Hendricks, 1<sup>st</sup> Lt. Commander





# Chaplain's Corner



## A Lost Cause?

We've all heard the Confederate States of America and all it stood for and fought for referred to as a "lost cause." Of course, we lost the War for Southern Independence, and as a result we lost our country. We also lost the opportunity to publicly denounce the likes of Lincoln, Sherman, and Butler for the war criminals they were. We lost the right to fully enjoy our proud Southern heritage, and show proper respect for honorable men like Lee, Jackson, and Forest. Many would even deny us the right to honor our brave and noble Confederate forefathers. Yes, a lot was lost at Appomattox Court House on April 9th, 1865 ..... but not the Cause!

In fact, the Confederate Cause is alive and well, and getting stronger every day. Throughout this country, people are getting tired of big government. They're getting tired of Democrats. They're getting tired of Republicans. They're getting tired of Washington bureaucracy. They see hundreds of billions of their hard-earned tax dollars being used, abused, misused, and squandered, while tax paying citizens are fighting to keep their homes and jobs: And they're getting tired of it! The result is, more and more people are beginning to embrace the Confederate Cause. They just don't know it.

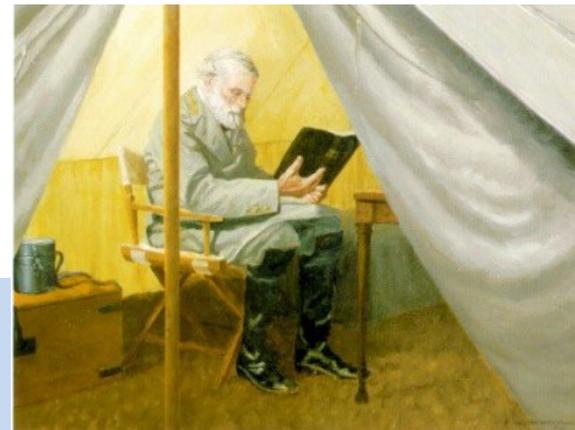
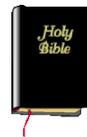
Jesus said in John 8:32, "And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free." Today, people everywhere are becoming more and more aware of the truth. And the truth is, "Big Brother" is getting bigger and more demanding and intrusive, while the concept of "we the people," upon which this country was founded, is being brushed aside. If one person or a small group of people, complain about a manger scene in front of a courthouse, or the Ten Commandments in a public building, or a monument honoring our brave Confederate soldiers in a town square, or a Confederate Battle Flag in the upper corner of a state flag, then they are removed, and "we the people" are not asked or consulted. People in this country are beginning to grow weary of truth and freedom being replaced by political correctness and personal agendas. They're beginning to see that the South was right, and still is. They just don't know it.

As the Sons of Confederate Veterans, we are charged with the "vindication of the cause for which (our Confederate forefathers) fought." Now it seems that the Cause is not only on the road to vindication, but acceptance by the vast majority of the country. The desire to restore the United States and the Constitution envisioned, and fought for, by our founding fathers, is truly a just and worthy cause. It was the cause of the Confederacy. And, it is rapidly becoming the cause of the people of the United States. Maybe they don't know it .... but we do!

My prayer today is that God will bless the Sons of Confederate Veterans and our just and most worthy Cause.

Bro. Len Patterson, Th.D

Past Chaplain, Army of Trans-Mississippi  
1941-2013



Antonio Hill - friend of Susan Frise Hathaway

Pease pray for me as I lay in the bed at mcv. I have been diagnosed with pulmonary embolism (blood clots in the lungs). Of course we all know the Lord is a healer. Blood thinner are only medical treatments. You always hear about other people but don't realize your own mortality until it happens to you, especially when you've always been in good health all of your life . Do not take life or health for granted.

**LOEL DENE "L.D." COX** has crossed over the river and now rests in the shade of the trees. Seaman First Class - U.S.S. Indianapolis, Born: Sidney, Texas (Comanche County), Resided: Comanche, Texas and a proud member of the Sons of Confederate Veterans Camp 1904 He was laid to rest at Cox Cemetery near Sidney. An Obit is posted at <http://www.heartlandfuneralhome.net/obituaries/>

**"IN ALL MY PERPLEXITIES AND DISTRESSES, THE BIBLE HAS NEVER FAILED TO GIVE ME LIGHT AND STRENGTH."**

**-GENERAL ROBERT E. LEE**

# Belo Camp 49 Upcoming Meetings:

# 2015

February 5<sup>th</sup> – Kyle Sims – Recruiting for the SCV

March 5<sup>th</sup> – Dr. Richard Lee Montgomery – The Confederate Book of Quotes and Narratives

April 2<sup>nd</sup> - Jerry C. Brewer – author of **DISMANTLING THE REPUBLIC**

May 7<sup>th</sup> – Bob Rubel – Images of the Conflict: Art of the War of Northern Agression

June 4<sup>th</sup> – Panel Discussion – Candidates for 4<sup>th</sup> Brigade and Tx. Div. Leadership invited to address Belo Camp

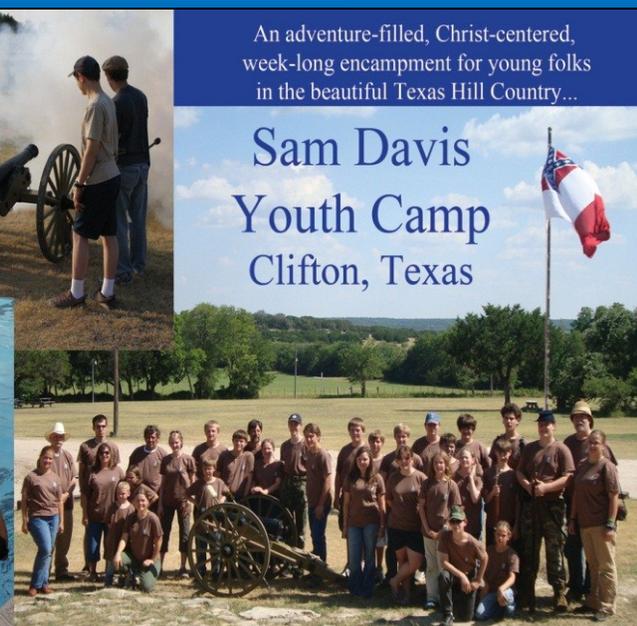
July 2<sup>nd</sup> – Mark Vogel – A One Act Play on Dick Dowling, The Hero of Sabine Pass



**Do your kids and grandkids know the real reasons the war was fought? Has school taught them that Lincoln is their "favourite President?"**

**Send them to Sam Davis Youth Camp to learn the truth about their heritage and why it is important!**

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=snuT8MgGbtK>



An adventure-filled, Christ-centered, week-long encampment for young folks in the beautiful Texas Hill Country...

**Sam Davis  
Youth Camp  
Clifton, Texas**



# Not to miss in this issue!

I Pledge Allegiance... to What? P 19

Holley goes LoLLeY P 28

Compatriot Rudy Ray takes a principled stand P 62

I salute the Confederate Flag..Let us do it right! P 80

What Does the Bible Say about Executive Power? P 82

Commander, Where is OUR Flag ?? P 84

Thought /Hate Crimes by evil VMI Students P 90

Va Flaggers: Lexington Reports P 91

JH Reagan Camp Children of Confederacy Monument Dedication P 111

Thomas J. "Stonewall" Jackson P 122

The History Revisionists by Joan Hough P 148

James Madison: How to Stop the Federal Government P 159

The Hampton Roads Peace Conference P 171

Sam Davis Youth Ball a huge success! P 177

**And MUCH MORE !**

## PLEASE BE IN PRAYER FOR THIS FAMILY



The two grandsons of Larry and Jennifer Figley were killed in a car crash near Crosby, and their mother was seriously injured.

Larry is a charter member of the Thomas Jewett Goree Camp 2129, Sons of Confederate Veterans, in Madisonville and its adjutant. Jennifer is active in the TSOCR.

Donations are being sought to help with the funerals of the two boys.

See News Report [HERE](#).

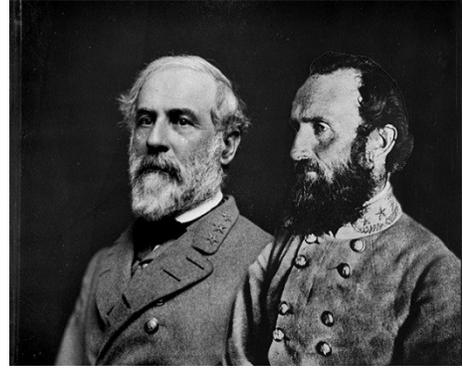


2015 Dates & Times	
Friday, March 6th	6:00-11:00pm
Saturday, March 7 <sup>th</sup>	10:30am-11:30pm
Sunday, March 8th	11:30am-7:30pm
Location	
Fair Park, Dallas, TX	

<http://www.ntif.org/index.html>

CLICK **HERE** FOR INFORMATION

# A.H. Belo Hosts Annual Lee-Jackson Celebration



Commander Mark Nash opened our first meeting of the New Year with enthusiasm and excitement as he introduced our Lee-Jackson Celebration speaker, W. Michael Hurley speaking on The Irish in the Confederacy.





Compatriot W. Michael Hurley presented a fascinating and motivating presentation on the Irish Confederates and their contributions to Southern history and in the War of Yankee Aggression defending our country. Six Confederate generals were born in Ireland. The Irish people never quit fighting to keep their Culture, Language and Heritage for over 700 years, despite British efforts to exterminate them as a people. The stood by an admonition: **“THE GREATEST WEAPON WE HAVE AGAINST OUR OPRESSORS IS TO REFUSE TO FORGET WHO WE ARE!”** The Southern people could learn from the Irish experience. Compatriot Hurley ended the presentation with a great sentiment,

**GOD BLESS THE CONFEDERATE STATES OF AMERICA.**





**Commander Mark Nash presented Guest Speaker W. Michael Hurley with matching busts of Lee and Jackson to commemorate his visit with us.**



**IF YOU DON'T LOVE  
DIXIE...THERE'S 37 OTHER  
STATES YOU CAN MOVE TO!**

**The R. E. Lee, Sons of Confederate Veterans, Camp #239  
Cordially Invites you to attend our  
★Confederate Heritage Charity Bar-B-Que★**



**Location: Hawaiian Falls Banquet Room  
8905 Clifford Street, White Settlement, TX 76108  
Casual Dress or Uniforms Requested  
Order your tickets today, space is limited!!  
Ticket Price: \$30.00 for singles or \$50.00 for couples  
April 11th, 2015 at 7:00 PM ~ doors open at 6:00PM**

**The Event will include with paid admission:**

**♪ Music by Old Time String Band Buttermilk Junction ♪  
World Class Texas Bar-B-Que with Sides and Desert  
Special Guest Presentation by Best Selling Author Ronald Kennedy  
Awards, Silent Auction and Fellowship**

**Contact Kevin Boldt or Cmdr Barry Turnage for tickets or  
Information, Cash or Check only! Checks Payable to: R E Lee Camp 239**

**Please Send your Admission and Guest Names to:**

**Kevin Boldt  
305 Angela Dr, Burleson, TX 76028  
817-706-9933  
krboldt@aol.com**

**Barry Turnage  
624 Owens Dr, Crowley, TX 76036  
817-297-2987  
peaceman1969@sbcglobal.net**

*The Sons of Confederate Veterans presents the*  
**2015 Stephen Dill Lee Institute**  
**THE REAL**  
**RESULTS OF 1865**

★ **February 6-7, 2015 – Dallas, Texas** ★



The 2015 Institute will be held at the Hilton Doubletree Hotel in Dallas, call 972-385-9000. Hosted by the Texas Division of the Sons of Confederate Veterans.

Registration: \$150 per person, \$125 for SCV members and family.  
Includes Saturday breakfast, lunch and banquet.

Register by calling 1-800-MY-DIXIE or visit our web site at

**[www.stephendleeinstitute.com](http://www.stephendleeinstitute.com)**

*🌿* Scholarships available for teachers and students *🌿*

For more information visit our web site at [www.stephendleeinstitute.com](http://www.stephendleeinstitute.com)  
or call Brag Bowling at (804) 389-3620

Special Notice – Stephen D. Lee Institute  
hosted by the Texas Division of the Sons of Confederate Veterans  
February 6-7, 2015

---

## THE REAL RESULTS OF 1865

The Stephen Dill Lee Institute is pleased to announce that in 2015, we will be heading southwest to Dallas, Texas. The Institute will be held at the Double Tree Hotel on February 6-7, 2015 and will be hosted by the Texas Division of the Sons of Confederate Veterans. The hotel is located near the world famous Galleria shopping center. This is the first time we have held the Institute in the southwest and hope to have a whole new group of Institute followers. As you know, there is nothing to compare with our Institute and it's special brand of high intellectual content coupled with fun times.

The Double Tree is centrally located in the Dallas metropolitan area. While in Dallas visit historic landmarks such as the Bush Presidential Library and Dealey Plaze, site of the JFK assassination. The famed stockyards of Ft. Worth are within driving distance of the hotel. Stay a few extra days to take in all Dallas and the state of Texas offer.

### Speakers

**Jeffery Addicott** – "Lincoln's Legacy: Lies, Damn Lies, and Damn Yankee Lies"

**Marshall DeRosa** – "Lincoln's War and the Warping of the American Mind"

**Donald Livingston** – "Lincoln's War and the Destruction of Jeffersonian America"

**Scott Bowden** – "You Have Only To Blow The Bugle; Robert E. Lee, the War and Its Aftermath"

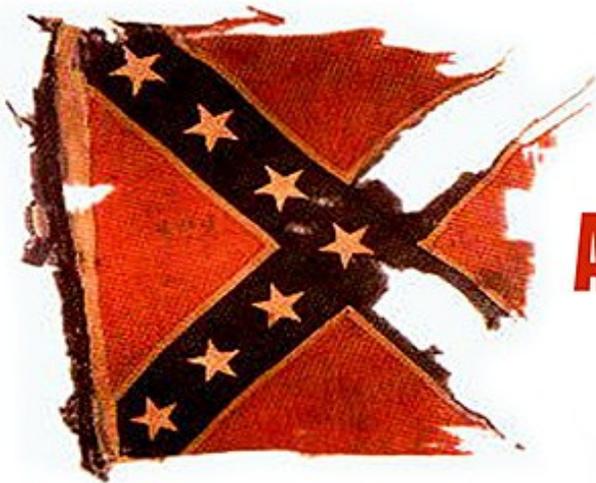
**Ego Tausch** – "Lincoln's Legacy: Who Needs a Constitution?"

**Kathleen Mayes Hines** – topic to be announced

While individual topics are being worked out at this moment, the Institute will continue with its special brand of scholarship and intellectual creativity. Biographies will soon be presented along with other pertinent information. Please register on this website or contact Ms. Cindy White at 1-800-My Dixie. Hotel reservations can be made directly at the hotel or as specified on this website.

For more information, please visit the Stephen D. Lee Website at:

<http://www.stephendleeinstitute.com/events.html>



Save  
The  
Museum  
Of The  
Confederacy

The world's largest repository of Confederate relics, Confederate archives and mementos, The White House Of The Confederacy, has been seized by a corporate merger that has ended the museum by removing forever its historic name, unique character and artifacts.

**ACT NOW BEFORE IT IS TOO LATE!**

The Virginia Division and National SCV request your direct donations for the legal effort to thwart this merger and restore The Confederate Museum according to the intent of its founders.

We seek all donors or living relatives of deceased donors, who have given artifacts or financial donations by gift, loan, or other, to contact our legal team.

Reject this merger as a violation of the sacred trust confided to The Confederate Memorial Literary Society as custodian of our priceless heritage.

[www.scvva.org](http://www.scvva.org)

MoC Committee, Virginia Division, SCV, PO Box 29814 Henrico, VA 23242-0814 or 804-517-6587 James Ray Chairman, MoC Committee, Virginia Division, SCV

**SEE ABOVE AND ACT NOW!**

**If you or your family present or past, have given any artifacts or financial donations to the MOC, it is important to contact the legal team as soon as possible. The Museum is now in the hands of ENEMIES of our Confederate Fathers and betraying a sacred trust.**

# BREACH OF TRUST

## DISMANTLING THE MUSEUM OF THE CONFEDERACY

December 12, 2014  
S. Waite Rawls  
Co-Chief Executive Officer  
The American Civil War Museum  
490 Tredegar Street  
Richmond, Virginia 23219



Dear Mr. Rawls:

Thank you for your letter of December 5, 2014. As a twenty year Army officer I will get straight to the heart of the matter.

First, I have been a member of the Museum of the Confederacy (MOC) for as long as I can recall. Like all true Southerners, I was attracted to the MOC because it reflected the point of view of the Southern Confederacy for which my direct ancestors fought to establish. Indeed, over the years, I have encouraged many family members and friends to either join the MOC or to support the MOC. I can name four people that joined as a result of my efforts.

In the vast ocean of political correctness associated with the causes and meaning of the War, the MOC alone stood tall and erect as a beacon of historical truth and Southern pride. Because the MOC was not afraid to tell our story or to buckle to critics of the Southern perspective, it made me very proud to be a Southerner. The MOC told about our Southern story and our Southern story alone. It was more than a collection of our relics, it was sacred ground. That is why the MOC was founded (yes I do realize that the name MOC was not the original name). Indeed, it is a fact that the founders did not intend to tell the Union side or preserve the Union relics!

Second, as an informed member of the MOC (and the Sons of Confederate Veterans) I heard many rumors about what might be in store for the MOC (from the first scares about changing the name). Nevertheless, I remained objective and continued my membership even in the face of the shocking news delivered last year that by 2015, the Museum of the Confederacy would be no more.

Third, fearing for the worst - that the MOC would be drowned in the aforementioned ocean of political correctness - this past summer I took my two boys to the MOC to instill in them the

same sense of pride for our Southern heritage that the founders of the MOC intended. Of course, I also wanted them to experience the MOC before it was swept away.

I was also curious to see for myself what would become of our Southern relics and our perspective of the War. Thus, we also went to the museum on Tredegar Street. What a contrast! In the best light, the so-called "new" civil war museum is like all the other "civil war" museums in the nation - a false brief for the "evil Southerner" and the "righteous Northerner." This message is not only overt but subliminal. Indeed, the so-called new logo says it all. The silhouette of the Southern soldier (red is the general color for the conservative South) is superimposed by a black civilian that is then superimposed by a Northern female civilian (blue is the general color for the North)! This is not a museum about the Confederacy.

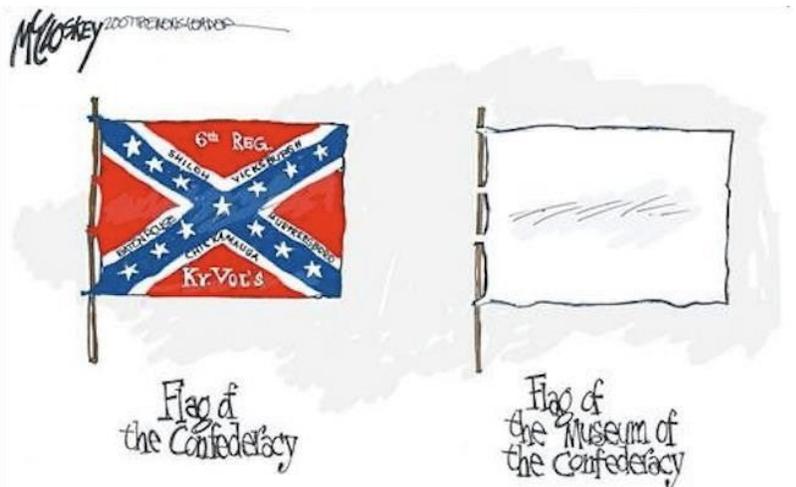
Fourth, your letter misses the point. While, the SCV may have gotten some of the timing, location, and terminology issues wrong, they hit the nail on the head. You are in fact presiding over the dismantling of the MOC and the replacement will not be dedicated to the Confederacy. Thus, I view your complaints that you are being misrepresented by the SCV as akin to arranging the deck chairs on the Titanic.

Finally, I note that my membership card reads: "The Museum of the Confederacy" expiration 6/3/2015. With the singular determination of the Confederate blood that runs in my veins, I will do all I can to restore the MOC (yes I contributed to the SCV legal fund and recruited others as well) or if that is not possible, to help build another Confederate history museum that remains true to its mandate. Thus, when the MOC is gone, I will obviously no longer be a member. In addition, I will encourage all those that I know that were members of the MOC to do the same. Without reservation, I strongly urge you to restore our Confederate museum and to turn back from the edge.

Signed

Jeffrey F. Addicott  
Lt. Colonel (US Army, ret)  
Distinguished Professor of Law  
Director, Center for Terrorism Law  
Saint Mary's University  
San Antonio, Texas

TRUST



# HERITAGE ALERT!

## Charlottesville to Consider Dropping Lee-Jackson City Holiday

A situation has come up very quickly in Charlottesville, Virginia, which requires the quick action of every SCV member who can e-mail or make a phone call to members of the City Council.

On this coming Monday evening (February 2nd) at its 7:00 p.m. meeting, the Charlottesville City Council will have a public hearing to consider ending the traditional Lee-Jackson official holiday in that city. The initiative is led by City Council member Kristin Szakos, who has also called for the removal of Confederate statues in that city.

Again, this is political correctness run amuck. It flies in the face of genuine understanding, is purposely insulting and divisive, and is the kind of thinking that disrespects history, tradition, and heritage. It is imperative that we communicate our positive feelings to that governmental body. Let them know how you feel in sincere terms, but please refrain as much as possible from name-calling and anger or anything that would feed their self-righteousness.

This potential action is narrow-minded and punitive to the feelings of the 70 million good Americans who are descended from those who fought for the Confederacy. They are not here to speak for themselves, so it is once again up to us.

Here is a contact list:

Mayor Satyendra Singh Huja

[huj1@comcast.net](mailto:huj1@comcast.net)

(434) 977-5094 (H)

(434) 981-8948 (C)

Vice Mayor Dede Smith

[dsmith@charlottesville.org](mailto:dsmith@charlottesville.org)

(434) 882-2933 ©

Kristin Szakos

[k.szakos@embarqmail.com](mailto:k.szakos@embarqmail.com)

(434) 987-1042 (C)

Kathy Galvin

[kgalvin@charlottesville.org](mailto:kgalvin@charlottesville.org)

(434) 249-6404 (C)

Bob Fenwick

[bfenwick@charlottesville.org](mailto:bfenwick@charlottesville.org)

(434) 249-3406 (C)

Your assistance is greatly appreciated!

Ben Jones

Chief of Heritage Operations

## PAUL VARGA-Co D, 5th Reg, TX Volunteers – Military Headstone

The family of Paul Varga have secured a military headstone for him. Mr Varga was in Co D, 5th Reg, TX Volunteers.

The date of the event will be **February 21st**, the cemetery is south of Brownwood, North of Brady.

The time of the event has been changed to **2:00 p.m.**

A full SCV formal dedication has been requested to include a Black Rose ceremony.

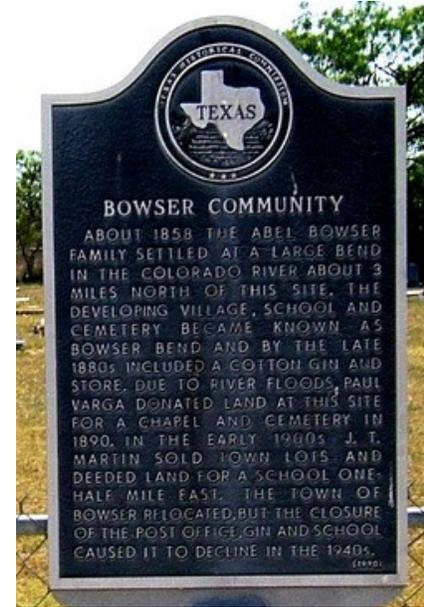
Help will be needed from all area camps and members.

Location : Varga Chapel Cemetery, Rochelle, San Saba County, Texas 76872

GPS Coordinates: Latitude: 31.40530,

Longitude: -98.98060

Point of contact for this event will be Will Bowen, past commander of the Tom Green Camp 1613 and a personal friend of the Varga family. His email is [bowenkaren5@gmail.com](mailto:bowenkaren5@gmail.com).



[Link to Map 1](#)

[Link to Map 2](#)



### Col Joseph W Speight to be promoted to General March 28<sup>th</sup> 2015

**Gen Felix H Robertson Camp 129 Waco, Texas** will be holding a post war ceremony to **promote Col Joseph W Speight to general**. It will be a honorary promotion approved by our national commander-in-chief **Kelly Barrows**. **He will be here, in person**, to confirm the promotion. Col Speight was the commander of the 15th Texas Infantry Regiment which was under the command of Gen Kirby Smith, Commander of the Trans-Mississippi Army. General Smith approved the promotion but the war ended before the Confederate Congress approved it. We will need riflemen here to fire a salute. It will take place on **March 28, 2015, 10 A. M., at the Oakwood Cemetery, located at 5th St & LaSalle Ave.** All SCV members are invited to attend. All OCR & UDC members are welcome also. Please mark your calendar to be there. If you come into Waco on IH35 it is very easy to find. If you are traveling south on IH35, exit at University Park. Go left on University Park until you reach LaSalle. The Baylor University Coliseum will be on your left. Go right on Lasalle to 5th Street. Go left and it will lead you into the cemetery. If you are traveling north on IH35 exit at University Park, by Baylor University, and go right on University Park and follow the same instructions. We are inviting all Masons to attend. Col Speight was responsible for getting the Grande Lodge of Texas to locate in Waco. He also held the position of President of the Texas Southern Baptist Convention. For more information please **contact Charles Oliver at 254-772-1676 or [charlesoliver@grandecom.net](mailto:charlesoliver@grandecom.net)**

# I Pledge Allegiance... to What?

I was raised in a small town where a parade was held for nearly every holiday. *On Main Street* (seriously). We've taken my son to several, the last being Veteran's Day. We did the customary moment of silence for the slain soldiers, though my silence was really hushed explanations to my son about why everyone was quietly clutching their chests. That moment set my wheels in motion.

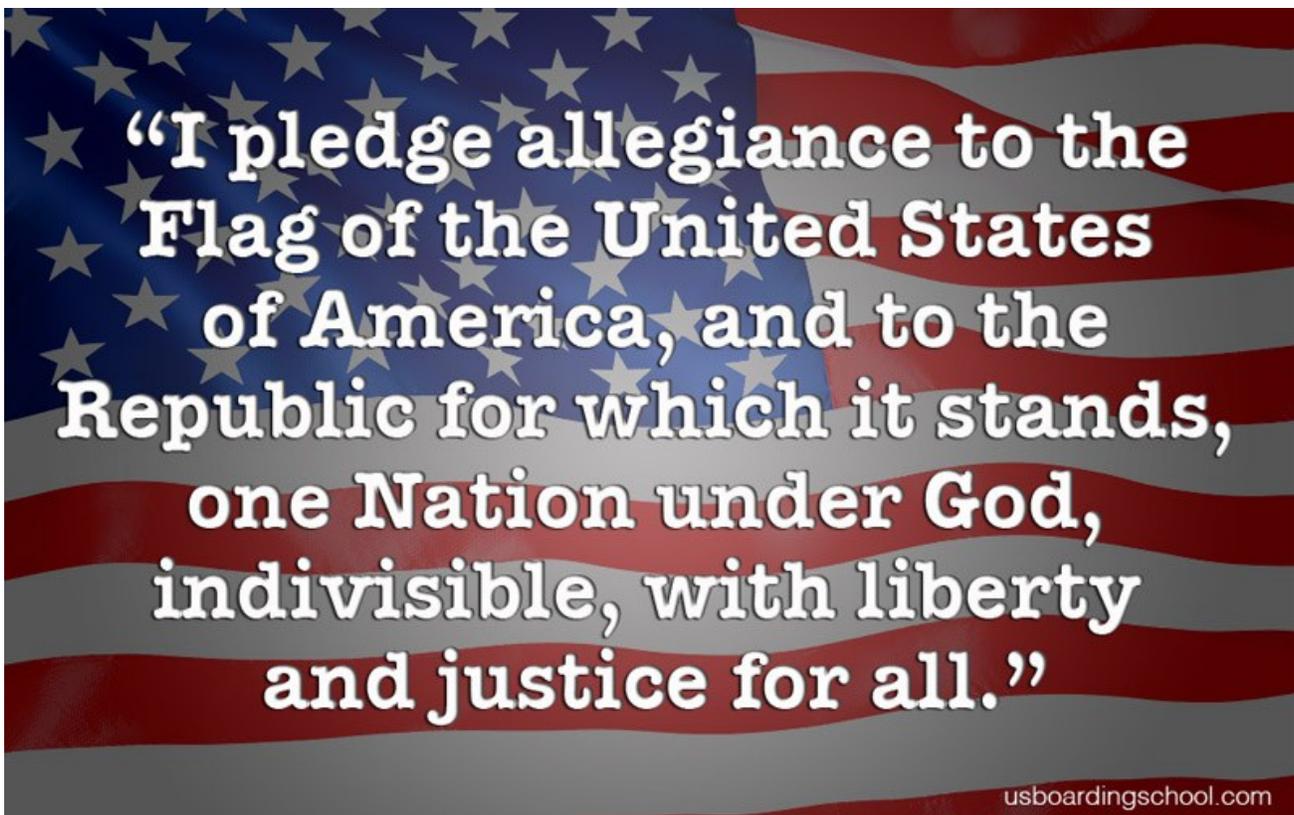
I began to consider what other American traditions he hasn't been exposed to yet and how I will teach him in those moments. The *Pledge of Allegiance* jumped out at me and my wheels started spinning faster.

Cue the inner monologue.

I will pretend for a moment that a 5-year-old *truly understands* words like "allegiance," "republic," "indivisible," "liberty," and "justice." I'll even pretend that this young child also understands the *gravity of a pledge*. But...

Should a child that cannot survive without the assistance of an adult be *pledging his life to anything*?

If I wanted to point out examples of these principles to my children, would I be able to find them in our daily news?



# A Little History

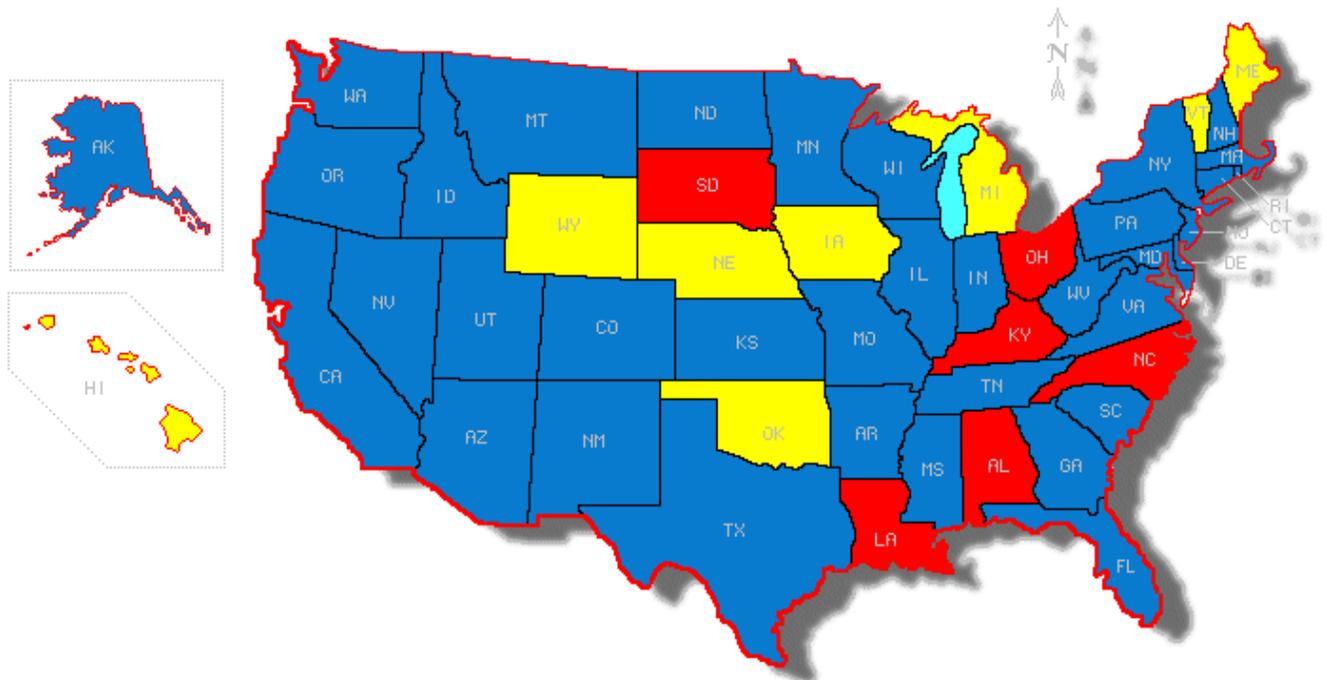
Daniel Sharp Ford, the owner of a magazine, called *Youth's Companion*, was on a *mission to sell American flags for every classroom nationwide*. The 400th anniversary of Christopher Columbus provided him with an opportunity to solicit more sales. He announced that a salute to the flag would be taking place to commemorate the Columbus Day celebration and was part of the *official program for schools all over America*. He then commissioned Francis Bellamy, who wrote and published the Pledge. Ford attended the national meeting of school superintendents and implemented the pledge/salute nationwide.

Essentially, the Pledge of Allegiance began as a *mandated ad campaign*, a tuneless jingle, among the most trusting and malleable minds of America.

## Jump to Today

The blue states are those where the government requires schools to recite the pledge daily.

- - Schools Required
- - Schools Have Option
- - No Law



Pledge of Allegiance Requirements by State

How does a country that has sacrificed countless lives for *freedom* require the youngest and *purest* members of its population *by law* to publicly vow an oath of loyalty?

Perhaps the motivation is simply to give the words of the pledge a nice, innocent home to lay dormant for years. Once the words have been repeated thousands of times they become benign, familiar. This successful

*conditioning process* creates adults who then feel the pledge is an integral part of their humanity, their altruistic patriotism. A form of Stockholm Syndrome. Perhaps.

## “It’s Just a Patriotic Gesture”

Maybe, but words have meaning. Repeatedly reciting words reinforces their meaning in our hearts whether we know it or not. Like *programming*. And if it’s really just symbolic and harmless then why are we saying it at all? It would be more supportive if we offered public prayer for our leaders, soldiers and “enemies.” It would be more respectful if we replaced idle words with action (voting is a good place to start).

Idle words, so idle in fact, that Bellamy was eventually directed to choreograph a salute that would assuage the awkwardness of the public chants: the Bellamy Salute (later adopted by the Nazis and subsequently replaced with hand over heart).



But above all, my brothers, do not swear, either by heaven or by earth or by any other oath, but let your “yes” be yes and your “no” be no, so that you may not fall under condemnation. James 5:12

It is a trap to dedicate something rashly and only later to consider one’s vows. Prov. 20:25

Do you see someone who speaks in haste? There is more hope for a fool than for them. Prov. 29:20

But I tell you that everyone will have to give account on the day of judgment for every empty word they have spoken. Matt. 12:36

Children will say the Pledge of Allegiance 200 times every year. That's 1,800 oaths given before starting high school. That means *our children are expected to devote their loyalty 1,800 times well before they are legally considered to have the capacity of adulthood.*

As a Christian American am I simply refusing to debate this one because it is so uncomfortable? *Do my memories of parades and rodeos, of red, white, and blue, country music and firework shows obstruct any real evaluation of "empty words" and "rash vows?"* Is it just too awkward to question this part of my humanity? *Should my humanity overrule my spirit?* I don't think so.

## **“I Want My Kids to Fit In”**

*But Why?*

My prayer for my children is that they have the confidence to question everything the world teaches. I pray my children are so secure in God's word and in my love as a parent that any discomfort or uneasiness will be discussed with me. I will teach my children to respect authority, *but that it can also be questioned.* I pray my children are bold enough to stand out from the norm when it means doing what is good. I hope that our children will stand shoulder-to-shoulder.

Even small children are known by their actions, so is their conduct really pure and upright? Prov. 20:11

Do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewal of your mind, that by testing you may discern what is the will of God, what is good and acceptable and perfect. Rom. 12:2

## **“Refusing to Pledge is Anti-American”**

Many teachers (and other “well-meaning” individuals) commonly accuse students who don't say the pledge of disrespecting America's troops. American patriotism and militarism have somehow morphed into the same thing and now abstaining from public expression of one equates with contempt for the other. (Does this make you shudder too?)

Instead of expressing criticism, it would be far more productive to discuss the ways we can show support for our fighting men and women (like keeping them home and alive...just one idea). It would be more educational to discuss what events have propagated our wars or to even challenge the theories of what necessitates war.

Section 4 of the U.S. flag code states that during “The Pledge of Allegiance to the Flag... Persons in uniform should remain silent, face the flag, and render the military salute.” Military persons are required to remain silent during the pledge. Following the example of our own uniformed men and women should not be considered “Anti-American.”

## **One Nation, Indivisible**

The secession from Britain is what formed this great country. I will not be pledging any oath that prohibits secession from an oppressive dictatorship.



## I am so blessed to be an American

...but I believe the pledge we are required to say is not an appropriate (or remotely accurate) oath for a Christian to make. The premise of it is wrong. Governments rise and fall. Rulers change our laws constantly. *I cannot swear an oath to be eternally loyal to a group of people.* I will not force my children to. I'm *loyal to the principles* our country was founded on: life, liberty, the pursuit of happiness, justice, but should these be removed...? Wouldn't it be "rash" to pledge my allegiance to a nation that has alienated these principles? Do you currently pledge your devotion proudly knowing that is in fact the case?

If America was legitimately invaded we'd stand to fight and protect our home. That does not mean we will blindly submit ourselves and our children *to do whatever the current government decides* is appropriate. Atrocities are committed daily by the "republic for which [the flag] stands." I can't offer my loyalty to that reality.

## OK, Now What?

As a Christian seeking wisdom and discernment, I cannot move forward with blissful ignorance. Though there will be a level of discomfort I'll need to acclimate to and judgement I must learn to disregard, I know I must refrain from promising the words of my America's Pledge of Allegiance.

The fear of the LORD is the beginning of knowledge, but fools despise wisdom and instruction. Prov. 1:7

I won't willingly be a fool. I will choose to listen to God's voice through scripture, with a healthy fear. I pray that He will determine my steps and move me within his will. I pray that He will speak to my spirit and lead me on the path of righteousness for His name's sake. I cannot ignore the voice of my Father.

Open my eye that I might see the wonderful things of your law. I am a stranger on earth; do not hide your commands from me. Psalm 119:18, 19

The reality is, I've already been living in a world I don't fit into. Being odd to a world that denies Christ is an essential part of living according to the Word of truth. What a wonderful blessing to learn this simple truth for myself and then raise up my children accordingly. There will be no feeling of loss for them. They will not be

required to recite these idle words. They will be taught to understand the gravity of our pledge and will be allowed to create one they can abide by. My children will be given the *freedom to speak* the words in their hearts. They will be granted the *liberty* to preserve their loyalty for a divine purpose. They will be taught to seek wisdom and discernment before pledging any allegiance.

# Your Turn

**What pledges have you made? Where have you devoted yourself? Would you rewrite America's Pledge of Allegiance? What would it say?**



(Photos courtesy of: procon.org, piqueshow.com, history.com, dailynews.com)

<http://www.awedbody.com/?p=516>

# I quote,

**"Americans tend to think of the Civil War as being fought to end slavery. Even one full year into the Civil War, the elimination of slavery was not a key objective of the North. Despite a vocal Abolitionist movement in the North, many people and many soldiers, in particular, opposed slavery, but did not favor emancipation. They expected slavery to die on its own over time. In the border states — Union states that still permitted slavery — the situation was full of problems. When a Union officer in Kentucky freed local slaves after a major victory, Union soldiers threw down their arms and disbanded. Lincoln intervened and "unfreed" those slaves. He did this to prevent a military backlash."**

<http://www.ushistory.org/us/34a.asp>

The north was not nearly so virtuous as many suppose. A divided family, one man who fought for the north as a cavalryman in an Indiana regiment actually supervised slaves at work part time while he ran his own farm. A relative of his fought for the South as a mounted infantryman in a Texas unit who did not own slaves and did not support slavery.

The Civil War had far more points of conflict than slavery, a major one was commerce and the control of the sale of Cotton. The continuing culture war of today is kind of an extension of those differences.

The US Constitution did not address slavery at all prior to the Civil War which is why it was a state by state decision until after the War of Northern Aggression. The Emancipation Proclamation only applied to the seceded Southern States and did not abolish slavery in the North.

The War between the States was not a Civil War. A Civil War is when one government wants to replace another. The U S was to keep their government and the CSA was to establish their own Government. The CSA never tried to overthrow the Union but to separate from it. The ability to do it was granted by the Constitution.

The second 13th Amendment passed by a Radical Republican controlled Congress in 1865 after the war, ended slavery in all the states. The south was under military control during reconstruction at the time.

Not one slave was ever transported from Africa to the Americas in a ship that flew the

**Confederate Flag, not one. All slaves transported to the Americas, by Americans, were transported in ships that flew the U S Flag, ships that sailed out of New York and Boston.**

# **Dixie State University returning controversial ‘Rebels’ statue to artist**

By [ANNIE KNOX](#) | The Salt Lake Tribune

First Published Jan 13 2015 09:42AM • Last Updated Jan 13 2015 09:34 pm



(Brian Maffly | Tribune file photo) |The Rebels,| by Utah sculptor Jerry Anderson.

**‘The Rebels’ » The school trades the sculpture for another work by the Utah artist.**

**A statue of Confederate soldier boys is gone once and for all from Dixie State University — a move by the school to shed lingering ties to slavery.**

**In an agreement with Leeds artist Jerry Anderson, the school has traded in "The Rebels." A replacement sculpture of bronze horses by Anderson is set to go up sometime this year.**

"What it means is that we can officially put the Confederate identity behind us," said university spokesman Steve Johnson, who called the statue the last campus 'emblem' of the school's Confederate ties. "Now the university can move forward."

The school [put the statue in storage](#) in December 2012 as Dixie State worked to win university status and still maintain "Dixie" in its name. The statue had become a flash point and staging area for anti-racism rallies. Lawmakers granted the university status in 2013.

"I think it was a bunch of 'balarney'," he said Tuesday, referring to the statue's removal from campus. "But it had to happen."

The 80-year-old artist said he recognizes why some officials wanted to uproot the statue but added, "I think America is too politically correct."

Shortly before the artwork was removed from campus, someone threw a sheet over its Confederate flag.

"The statue has become a lightning rod. We feel bad about that," then-Dixie State President Stephen Nadauld said at the time. "It's a beautiful piece of art. We are nervous something might happen to the statue. It might be vandalized."

St. George's nickname as Utah's "Dixie" has sparked sensitivity and debate, with younger generations noting the South's shameful history of slavery. Others have argued the moniker is harmless shorthand for the area's warmer climes and Mormon pioneers' attempts to grow cotton in the region.

For a time, Dixie State University administrators fully endorsed the connection to the antebellum South.

Inspired by the song "Two Little Boys," which tells the story of two young men who reunite as Union soldiers during the Civil War, Anderson depicted the soldiers in a small sculpture called "Retreat" 30 years ago. In 1983, he was commissioned to create a life-sized version.

"I want people to know that the statue really didn't represent one nation," Anderson said in an interview Tuesday. "It represented every war in every country. What they've forgotten to see in that message is two boys helping each other."

The statue was installed first at the Green Valley Mall and later donated to the Dixie Convention Center on the university campus in 1987. Anderson sold the statue to the school for \$35,000 in the 1980s.

"We are very appreciative of Mr. Anderson's generous artistic contributions, not only to Dixie State University, but to the entire region," DSU President Richard B. Williams said in a statement. "We are grateful to Jerry for working with us and we look forward to displaying his work on this campus for everyone to view and enjoy in the years to come."

After the school removed "The Rebels," a judge declared the university its legal owner.

"You've got to make everybody happy, is what I've learned from it all," Anderson said.

The statue is back at his studio and is set to be installed in a Leeds gallery. The artist invited the public to come look at it any time.

"Art shouldn't be hidden," he said. "Art is created for history. Not for what's right and what's wrong, but for everyone to be able to see and learn from."

<http://www.sltrib.com/news/2053278-155/dixie-state-university-returning-controversial-rebels>



# HOLLEY GOES LOLLeY!

In the deceptive spirit he used to represent false charges to the National Ad Hoc Disciplinary Committee (until caught in his pretended charges) and in that same conniving spirit that he sent his FABRICATED charge letters to the West Texas compatriots, where he LIED about actions taken by the DEC, the morally discredited Texas Division Commander moved forward with his despicable vendetta, disregarding any constitutional or ethical limits on his power to attack his “flag haters” as he calls them.

Disregarding the Inspector General’s clear instructions, the Rogue Texas Division Commander sent fraudulent letters of reprimand to the five West Texas Compatriots which he has waged a vendetta against for over a year. This absolutely violated constitutional requirements of notification and blatantly disregarded the instructions of the Division Inspector General that “If the consensus of the DEC is to NOT ACCEPT the Report, but to take action other than those recommended in the Report, then notice requirements in the Constitution mandate that the DEC take any such action at the next DEC meeting in the Spring.”

The DEC voted handily to accept the report with a majority vote, despite the accusers, who had committed even more egregious acts against the West Texas men, not recusing themselves from the process. Vendetta Boss Holley’s Chief of Staff Dennis Beal claims that the DEC is not required to follow Roberts Rules of Order (directly contradicting National Constitutional requirements) muddies the process even more. Accepting the report is not the same as voting a conviction of the charges and thus would only require a simple majority to pass. **Thus it passed.**

The Vendetta Squad maintains erroneously that it requires a 4/5ths vote to pass and that Roberts Rules do not apply because, according to Beal, in a letter 12/23/14 2:59 PM (see complete letter on pg. 24 January 15<sup>th</sup> Belo Herald):

As to your question regarding Robert Rules of Order (RRO). RRO are required for the yearly convention business meeting. It is not required for the conduct of the DEC. That was by design from seven years ago. It was felt that because of the seriousness of elections and constitutional amendment procedures that take place only at the division convention, that RRO would be followed during the division convention due to the requirements for a formal structure and strict adherence to a set of standard rules.

However, that is the only time that RRO is required. The DEC has never required the use of RRO. It would be impractical to do so due to not having a qualified parliamentarian present at each and every DEC meeting. It would place a burden on the meeting and the commander that the DEC felt was unnecessary.

As to your question regarding recusing. No one was required to recuse themselves from any of the proceedings. As Rob points out, RRO insinuates that one should recuse themselves if they feel they have a direct personal or pecuniary interest, but RRO does not apply to DEC meetings and even if it did, if the individual does not think he has a direct personal or pecuniary interest then he is not obligated to recuse himself regardless of what you or I think.

**Efforts by the Inspector General to get the minutes which outline the alleged changes supposed to have taken place seven years ago from Holley and Beal have fallen on deaf ears, as they have failed to respond to requests for such from the Inspector General. Long time DEC members can not recall any such changes ever being made, as the CofC alleges.**

**Voting to accept the report (which, in fact occurred) left the Rogue Division Commander with only the option of sending personal, “non-punative” letters of displeasure to all parties, including the accusers on the Division Command, and others who supported Holley, because of their improper conduct. He could personally send letters to ALL of them or NONE of them, not selectively.**

**Instead, the Rogue Command disregarded the Inspector General’s clear instructions, violated constitutional due process and sent letters to the five West Texas Compatriots. Needless to say, they mean NOTHING.**

► Below are several documents, including Inspector General Rob Jones’ letter of instruction to the DEC which accompanied the Ad Hoc Committee Report to the December DEC, and which was ignored by the Commander.

(see full report in the January 2015 Belo Herald: <http://www.belocamp.com/belo-herald.html>)

► Also, below, is the most recent letter from Rocky Sprott’s lawyer to the Inspector General in response to the bogus letter of reprimand from Division Dictator Holley.

► The December 2014 DEC minutes.

► Finally, Rocky Sprott’s latest response and documents he provided in his defence.

Sent: Thu, Dec 11, 2014 4:31 pm  
Subject: Disciplinary Report - 12/11/2014

Dear Commander Holley and Members of the DEC:

Attached is my Disciplinary Report relating to the charges proffered on September 27, 2014. It represents the consensus of the Committee as a fair and equitable solution. I have tried to send to all members of the DEC, but I probably have missed some. That is not my intention, and please share this report so that all DEC members have a copy.

Because the time period for notifying the accused Compatriots has passed, the DEC will be able to hear the report and discuss the report. **The DEC will only be able to accept the report without amendment AT THIS DEC MEETING.** If the consensus of the DEC is to NOT ACCEPT the Report, but to take action other than those recommended in the Report, then notice requirements in the Constitution mandate that the DEC take any such action at the next DEC meeting in the Spring.

Under no circumstances, is the DEC required to accept this report as is. It is the prerogative of the DEC to take any action it chooses -- reject the report, accept some of the recommendations and not others, or accept all. **I only caution that not accepting the report or any portion of the report will have to be done at the next meeting in order to afford the accused Compatriots an opportunity to plead their case before the DEC.**

This has been a very difficult investigation to make. There has been much heat and little light generated by all sides. The Committee members hope that this report can serve as the basis for getting this issue behind us, all shaking hands and leaving as friends, compatriots, and brothers in arms in the great struggle for our heritage in which we are engaged.

FYI, I will be at Lorena in order to present this report, but have to leave at 11:00 in order to take my daughter to a church Christmas event. Therefore, I respectfully request that we take up this item first.

Sincerely,

Robert N. (Rob) Jones, Jr.  
Division Inspector General

The Law Office of

# STANLEY D. HUDSON

Board Certified Personal Injury Trial Lawyer  
Texas Board of Legal Specialization

Admitted in Texas, Colorado  
& Pennsylvania

4264 West Lovers Lane  
Dallas, TX 75209

Telephone: (214) 526-5300  
Facsimile: (214) 526-5354  
shudson@lawofficeofstanleydhudson.com

January 21, 2015

**VIA CMRRR: 7014 2870 0001 1742 3546 AND E-MAIL**

Mr. Robert N. Jones  
Chairman of the Disciplinary Committee  
P.O. Box 26  
Chatfield, TX 75105

RE: Rocky Sprott

Dear Rob:

You might not have received a copy of the "disciplinary letter" that Commander Holley sent to Rocky Sprott. Therefore, I am enclosing a copy for your review.

By perpetrating the false representations which were originally started by Michael Moore, this Commander has disgraced and dishonored his office and the Compatriots in the Texas Division and the Sons of Confederate Veterans. Indeed, the Commander's fraudulent letter will be considered as nothing more than another illicit attempt to discredit Compatriot Sprott's reputation.

As a result of the Disciplinary Committee's careful investigation of the circumstances surrounding the Lubbock incident, the Committee was unpersuaded that the alleged use of "foul and abusive language" would support disciplinary action against the named Compatriots, and it found that assessment of blame against only the accused Compatriots could not be an accurate and fair result. Therefore, the Committee recommended that the charges against Compatriot Sprott and the others should not go forward.

Although a majority of the members of the Division Executive Council (DEC) voted to fully approve the Committee's report, an unnecessary 4/5 approval was not possible due to votes cast by the Commander and other parties interested in the outcome of the case. Thereafter, without providing the accused with proper notice pursuant to the Texas Constitution and without providing the accused with an opportunity to be heard, 4/5 of the DEC members voted to approve the Committee's recommendations, with the exception that Letters of Reprimand would be sent to only one side involved in the Lubbock conflict.

The Committee and the DEC did not find that Compatriot Sprott used any "foul and abusive" language, and according to the witnesses, this allegation was a complete fabrication by Mr. Moore. Furthermore, the Committee and the DEC did not recommend that Compatriot Sprott

January 21, 2015

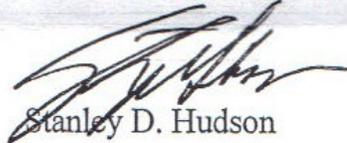
Page 2 of 2

receive a Letter of Reprimand on account of any alleged use of such language. This false representation was recently fabricated by Commander Holley.

Ironically, Commander Holley's 1/7/15 letter was not a Letter of Reprimand which accurately and truthfully set forth alleged violations of § 13.1 of the Texas Division Constitution. Instead, the letter further established Commander Holley's own neglect of duty, dishonesty, and other violations of § 13.1, as he continues the administrator's personal vendetta against Compatriot Sprott.

Thank you for spending your valuable time in an effort to reach a fair and equitable result in this matter.

Respectfully submitted,



Stanley D. Hudson

SDH/mj

Enclosure

cc: Rocky Sprott

cc: Mike Moore



Liars place their interests ahead of yours.

# Minutes of Texas Division Executive Council

13 December 2014

Lorena, Texas.



Minutes of Texas Division Executive Council, Sons of Confederate Veterans, 13 December 2014, Lorena, Texas.

- Meeting was called to order by Commander at 0940
- Division Adjutant called the role and reported that a quorum was present. Total present at the DEC meeting 41 SCV. Of the 41 SCV members 31 were DEC members.
- Minutes from the previous DEC meeting were approved by unanimous consent.
- The Division Adjutant gave his strength and financial report.

## BUSINESS ITEMS:

- Bryan Veterans Park:
  - Bill Boyd gave a presentation on the Bryan SCV statue for the Brazos Valley Veterans Park and appealed to the division for funds for the confederate memorial. No action was taken by the DEC.
- New Camps:
  - 3<sup>rd</sup> Lt Commander Bray gave an update on two new camps that have been formed since the last DEC meeting.
- Executive Session:
  - The DEC went into executive session. Division adjutant reported a quorum was present (there were 31 members present for the executive session). The disciplinary committee gave its report regarding the individuals involved in the Lubbock matter. The report was read aloud by Compatriot Boyd (a member of the committee). A lengthy discussion period ensued.
  - A motion was made by Mark Robinson to accept all of the provisions and recommendations of the disciplinary committee's report. A secret paper ballot vote was taken. The vote was 19 in favor and 11 against. The motion failed to meet the required 4/5 criteria of 24 votes to pass. The motion failed.

**Editors Note: The above highlighted is false. CofC Beal (see his letter to the Inspector General above) is no authority on parliamentary procedure as is past Division Parliamentarian, and Ad Hoc Disciplinary Chairman and Inspector General Rob Jones, who affirms that only a simple majority was required to accept the report.**



- A motion was made to accept the recommendations of the disciplinary committee report with the exception of the recommendations regarding Mike Moore, Mike Walker and David McMahon. These three individuals were not part or the subject of the original investigation. A head count vote was taken by each member raising his hand in favor or against the motion. The vote was 24 in favor and 7 against. The motion passed due to the vote count achieving the 4/5 criteria required.
- The direction from the DEC is for the Commander to issue a Letter of Reprimand to Compatriots; Cecil Pope, Clarence Pope, Ransom Alford, Joseph Hernandez and Rocky Sprott, for offenses as specified in the disciplinary report. In addition, and according to the recommendations of the disciplinary committee report and so voted on by the DEC, that the calling for the election of camp officers in the Lubbock camp at the February 2014 meeting was not fair because it did not give all camp members advanced notice so as to make plans to attend. Such an unfair election is a violation of the guarantee of fair elections that is implied in the division constitution. The TX Division will take such actions as necessary to create another camp in Lubbock so that the respective adherents to Compatriots Walker and Hernandez each have a camp that is operated to their wishes and is in compliance with the Texas Division Constitution. The DEC directs that a new camp be chartered via IHQ chartering procedures and regulations for Compatriot Hernandez and his allies. Effective immediately Camp 1352 will retain its original officers and camp structure that existed prior February 2014 and will retain all funds deposited in its treasury equal to the amount in that treasury on March 20, 2014. Any camp funds deposited into Camp 1352 treasury after March 20, 2014 will be applied to and deposited into the treasury of a newly chartered camp once that newly chartered camp is approved by International HQ.

- Adjourned:

- Meeting was adjourned at 1325.

For the Commander,

Dennis Beal Chief of Staff  
Texas Division  
Sons of Confederate Veterans

# Division JAG Mike Moore's "Final Response to Sam C."

Final Response to Sam C. for your perusal (careful study)  
-----

From: Yvonne <[ymoorelaw@aol.com](mailto:ymoorelaw@aol.com)> <<mailto:ymoorelaw@aol.com>>  
Date: January 8, 2015 at 6:59:57 PM CST  
Subject: Final response to Sam C.

Dear Compatriots,  
I got Sam's farewell broadside week before last although it was dated December 6th. Maybe the strife and controversy in our camp and brigade are close to an end but I have to respond to Sam's statements.

He calls me a liar but ends by saying that he's going to stay away from the next few camp meetings to avoid disruption so (he) wouldn't attend meetings anytime soon.

Sam and Rocky have now revealed their true colors. In the last four weeks, and while still serving as Plemons-Shelby Camp's commander and adjutant, Sam and Rocky approached some of our members and at least one of our newly elected officers, recruiting them for the new camp Sam and Rocky are starting from our present members. Then we got a nice letter from Rocky on Friday January 2nd resigning as our adjutant.

Let me summarize what those two have done in the last year. Due to his obsessive hatred of the United States and while acting as brigade chaplain, Rocky convinced four members of the Lubbock camp to stage a revolt in February to have a no-notice election to kick out the commander and install a rump set of officers, simply because they didn't want to wait another month for an election on whether or not to continue displaying the U.S. flag and reciting the pledge of allegiance to open their meetings. I knew Rocky was preaching to the Lubbock Four that they should quit honoring the U.S. flag, but he gave me his word in January that he wouldn't let the situation get out of control and cause longtime problems in the Lubbock camp. I told him I had no objection to them not honoring the U.S. flag as long as the decision was made in a fair election. Instead, we now have a permanent split and two camps in Lubbock and they are now splitting the Amarillo camp, just because they wouldn't wait to have a fair election in Lubbock.

honor the farewell messages of Generals Lee and Forrest who said we gave our best, we lost the War, now go home and be good Americans. We also honor the Southern boys who have generally won all the U.S. wars since 1865 and rescued the rest of the world in the two world wars.

Rocky and Sam preach bravery but they didn't have the guts to serve in the military in Vietnam. I volunteered and served as a destroyer officer in the Navy.

Do Sam and Rocky have any sense of loyalty? Mike Walker, the Lubbock camp commander, is the First Lt. Brigade Commander and Sam and Rocky are the Second Lt. Commander and Chaplain, respectively. Are we not expected to show loyalty to our leaders who are up the chain of command? A lot of this controversy started when Rocky thought Mike Walker was spreading gossip to a local school board about a member's felony convictions including manufacture of meth and felon in possession of a firearm. Walker didn't even know about the crimes, they are a matter of public record, and the ladies at the courthouse were well aware of the man's record. But once Rocky got it in his head to hate Mike Walker, he was ready to have Mike's head on a platter even if it did great damage to the SCV.

All the above information is the bad news. Now let me give you some good news. Despite the current fighting between Rocky and me, I have the utmost respect and admiration for him. He has a wonderful wife and took great care of his elderly mom before she died in July. He has spent countless hours and traveled thousands of miles on the graves registration survey. We have been to national reunions together, walked the battlefields at Franklin and Murfreesboro and traced the route of the last campaign of General Forrest in and north of Selma. He and Sam have educated me about the Texas units in the War as I have tried to teach them about General Forrest and his brave men, including Sol Ross's Texans. How can you not admire a man as dedicated as Rocky?

Only in the last year has Rocky gotten so deeply into the anti-USA stuff that I feel that he has lost perspective and gone way off the deep end in his revolutionary rhetoric. Thank God the media didn't pick up on the Nazi salutes, the Sieg Heil and the other stuff in the crowded restaurant in Lubbock.

In the next brigade elections I will run for reelection as brigade commander and hope that we can start healing the wounds.

“One lie is enough  
to question all  
truths”

Anonymous  
4 July 2010 12:27 pm

AUG 1 2015

---

**INBOX**   Compose   Addresses   Folders   Options

---

Current Folder: **Drafts** Calendar   Help   Search

---

Logged in as: **rsrott@xit.net** Sign Out

---

All Msgs   Back   Forward   Fwd as Att.   Reply   Reply All

Delete   Resume Draft   Forward

---

**Subject:** Response to Mike Moore's E-Mail 1-8-15  
**From:** rsrott@xit.net  
**Date:** Thu, January 22, 2015 11:51 am  
**To:** "Stanley Hudson" <shudson@lawofficeofstanleydhudson.com>  
**Cc:** [REDACTED]  
**Bcc:** [REDACTED]  
**Priority:** Normal

**Options:** [View Full Header](#) | [View Printable Version](#) | [Download this as a file](#) | [Add to Addressbook](#) | [View Message details](#)

## Compatriot Sprott's answer to Mike Moore's "Final Response to Sam C."

Truth and Lies

>Dear Compatriots,

Many of you are in receipt of an e-mail from Mike Moore dated January 8th, 2015. It is with great weariness of heart that I am forced to take up my pen in my defense and in defense of other compatriots in the High Plains Brigade.

Cammander Cornelius and I have tried to keep the controversy troubling the Texas Division out of the day to day life of the Plemons Shelby Camp but Mike Moore seems determined to constantly raise these issues in the monthly meetings of the camp.

Now, Mr. Moore has issued a e-mail to all the Plemons-Shelby members in an attempt to incriminate Sam Cornelius, myself, and others by making allegations of wrong doing.

This is the second time that Mr. Moore has published a statement which catalogs the offences of several of the compatriots of the High Plains Brigade. The first was a letter which Mr. Moore distributed to the Plemons Shelby Camp on May, 18 2014. Many of you should have a copy of that letter. (See Exhibits L,M)

It seems to me very peculiar that an attorney at law would be so ill advised and careless to, on two different occasions, publish correspondence that exposes him to the charge of liable and which could easily result in civil action.

The one thing which is true and common in both these letters is the fact that Mr. Moore, for whatever reason, has been motivated to make statements that are not true about various compatriots' actions, words, and different situations associated within the "Lubbock Affair" and the history of the High Plains Brigade over the past

year.

At this point, dear compatriots, I am no longer surprised or shocked by Mr. Moore's erroneous assertions. It has become something that one can expect because that is who Mike Moore is.

None the less, I am almost to the point of feeling sorry for Mr. Moore, despite the injury which his slanderous statement and libelous correspondence has inflicted upon me, and others in the Texas Division. Eventually he will be exposed, and Mr. Moore will be a man without credibility or honor in our fraternity of Southern gentlemen.

Upon reflection, I find this development to be very depressing because this will mean Mr. Moore has squandered a wonderful opportunity from his position as Chief Judge Advocate and 1st Brigade Commander, to do so much good, to lead men in the service of the Charge, to set an example for others to follow, and encourage and strengthen the Texas Division.

Instead we have a very malignant influence coming from Mr. Moore's tenure as Judge Advocate, which has helped to foul the waters and has poisoned the Texas Division with distrust, disunity, and hatred.

As far as Mr. Moore's leadership as High Plains Brigade Commander, the best way to character it, is non-existent, in terms of active leadership and participating in Brigade events.

What he has done with his time as Brigade Commander, is to attack the men of his own brigade and conduct a campaign of partisan politics, with the chief aim of ridding the SCV of men who do not share his brand of "political correctness".

This e-mail dated January 8, 2015, is a prime example of the length to which Mr. Moore is willing to go to effect these ends.

For some time, several compatriots in the Plemons Shelby Camp have discussed among themselves the need for a new camp in the Northern Panhandle. Craig Cousins, a member from the Oklahoma Panhandle, and former camp commander, Sam Cornelius, and myself, determined that the time had come to charter a new camp in Sherman County.

Twenty five members of the Amarillo camp agreed, and have applied for transfers to help establish the Sidney Sherman Camp in Stratford, Texas.

Compatriots, it is our right to do this and it will have a very positive result for the growth and influence of the SCV on the High Plains.

None the less, Mr. Moore has taken offense at our efforts and has used this as an occasion to try, once again, to vilify and sully the reputation of Sam, me, and others.

Mr. Moore's attempt to accomplish this is based upon a series of libelous statements which he made in his e-mail. Let me simply go through the e-mail list, as the statements occur.

1. That Rocky and Sam were doing something wrong in working to charter a new camp.  
NOT TRUE!
2. That Rocky hates the United States.  
NOT TRUE!
3. That Rocky influenced Lubbock members to stage a revolt to overthrow Mike Walker's leadership.  
NOT TRUE! (See Ad Hoc Disciplinary Committee Report 12-11-14), (See Also Exhibit J)
4. That Rocky was ever at any time in a position to control events in the Lubbock camp.  
NOT TRUE! (See Ad Hoc Disciplinary Committee Report 12-11-14)
5. That the election in Lubbock in February 2014 was unfair.  
NOT TRUE! (Fairness in this context is based on a subjective standard uniquely derived from the will of the camps each of which are autonomous and is not mandated by either the National or Division Constitutions) (See Exhibits A, H,J,K)
6. That the agreement reached March 2014 concerning new elections in the Lubbock camp in April was not predicated upon reasonable cause which the facts failed to sustain.  
NOT TRUE! (See Exhibits A, H,K)
7. That Sam and Rocky were ordered to stay out of Lubbock

affairs and that Sam and Rocky were manipulating events in Lubbock.

NOT TRUE! (See Exhibits H,J),(See Also Ad Hoc Disciplinary Committee Report, 12-11-14)

8. That an agreement was in place preventing Sam and Rocky from attending any meetings of the Lubbock camp.

NOT TRUE! (See Exhibits H,J)

9. That three of the "Lubbock Four" gave the Nazi salute and hollered "Sieg Heil" in salute to the U.S. flag.

NOT TRUE: IT DID NOT HAPPEN! (See Exhibits B,C,F,H)

10. That Rocky covered the U.S. flag with a battle flag.

NOT TRUE! (See Exhibit C)

11. That the Lubbock commander, Joey Hernandez, had any obligation to stage a new election.

NOT TRUE! (See Exhibits A,H,K)

12. That Mr. Moore and David McMahon interference in the conduct of the Lubbock meeting was a legitimate and benign attempt to influence the meeting on March 20, 2014.

NOT TRUE! (See Exhibits B,C,H)

13. That Rocky approached David McMahon saying "You don't belong here, you don't know what you are doing, go fuck yourself."

NOT TRUE! (See Exhibits C,D,E,J)

(Mr. Moore is the only one in the room who used the "F" word - once to Joey Hernandez, and once to Randy Alford, and in each of these instances, in the presence of ladies assembled.)

(Also, please compare Mr. Moore's statement on this point about Rocky's use of the "F" word with that of his May 18, 2014 letter where Mike says Rocky used the "F" word with a prayer. See Exhibits L,M)

14. That David McMahon made any comment about conduct as Southern gentlemen while I was present at the March meeting in Lubbock.

NOT TRUE!

15. That David McMahon and Mike Moore did not, in fact, obstruct the business of the Lubbock camp.

NOT TRUE! (See Exhibits B,C,H)

16. That the vote of the DEC on December 13, 2014 failed to call for a reprimand of Mike Walker, Mike Moore, and David McMahon.

NOT TRUE!

(The Division Inspector General, Rob Jones, ruled the simple majority vote of 19 to 11 to accept the report as presented by the investigative committee was sufficient to approve the report "as is", and that the report could not be amended at the December 13, 2014 meeting of the DEC, and a four fifths vote was not required for the adoption of the report. Therefore, the DEC's action required a reprimand of Mike Moore, Mike Walker and David McMahon. The actions of Moore, Walker, and McMahon did in fact provoke, instigate, and contribute to the disruption of the March 20, 2014 meeting of the Col. Thomas S. Lubbock camp.)

17. That Rocky owed anyone an apology for giving a Nazi salute.

NOT TRUE! (See Exhibits C,F,H)

(Rocky did not salute the U.S. flag. PERIOD!)

18. That Rocky campaigned for the nomination for Confederate of the Year.

NOT TRUE!

19. That Rocky made hatred of the USA a test of a true Confederate.

NOT TRUE!

20. That Rocky used his position as chaplain to preach hatred.

NOT TRUE!

21. That Sam and Rocky are responsible for causing the 1st Brigade, to not function.

NOT TRUE!

(The 1st Brigade has been active over the last two years in dozens of events, without the leadership of Commander Mike Moore.)

22. That the leadership of the new camp (Sidney Sherman) is marked by reprehensible actions and motives.

NOT TRUE!

23. That Sam and Rocky acted inappropriately in working to charter a new camp in the High Plains Brigade.

NOT TRUE!

24. That Sam and Rocky have made hatred of the USA a priority at the expense of their love, loyalty, and respect for our Confederate ancestors.

NOT TRUE!

25. That Sam and Rocky are cowards for not serving in the U.S. military, and that Mr. Moore's service on a Navy Destroyer necessarily makes him as a patriot superior to others.

NOT TRUE! (See Exhibit G)

26. That Rocky acted out of hatred for Mike Walker in attempting to clear Mike Walker of charges of conduct unbecoming.

NOT TRUE! (It is truly sad that Mr. Moore would try to make something ugly out of my efforts to help Mr. Walker who was my friend and compatriot. I traveled all the way Tohoka, Tex. to clear Walker's name and to silence any false rumors that could disturb the brigade. This was my duty as the brigade chaplain.)

27. That it is a matter of public record that an SCV member had multiple felony convictions for methamphetamine and as a felon in possession of a firearm.

NOT TRUE! (See Exhibit I)

You might wonder why Mr. Moore is so motivated to make these libelous statements and maliciously try to discredit and misrepresent Sam Cornelius, and myself and others.

To tell the truth, I am not absolutely sure what inspires such behavior, but I do feel that to Mr. Moore and others who share his view of patriotism, are intolerant of anyone who objects to the U.S. flag and pledge of allegiance (ie. "One Nation, Indivisible") in our camp meetings.

Believe it or not, I really think that anger over this issue is at the heart of 90% of this whole ugly drawn out affair!

Since the SCV is structured around the principle of local camp autonomy, and since men such as Mr. Moore, Mr. McMahon and Mr. Walker are intolerant of anyone or any camp who fails to share their views, I would suggest that they leave the SCV, and find an alternative outlet for their brand of patriotism, in such organizations as the American Legion or VFW.

At the very least, these men in the Texas Division leadership, of whom, Mr. Moore seems to be a chief spokesperson, should cease from their "end justifies the means" leadership, (I guess they learned that from the Yankees.), and allow their compatriots who truly understand the imperatives of the Charge, take the reins of leadership in the Texas Division.

Respectfully your servant in the Cause of the South:

Rocky Jim Sprott  
Adjutant and Chaplain  
High Plains Brigade

June 2014

Exhibit A

SCV MEETING FEB 20, 2014

Constitutional Committee brought ammendments to the floor and it was moved by Howard Timmons that all be voted on at once. "It was seconded and voted unamiously to accept them. We then voted in new members. Now, since we were in violation of our constitution the motion was made to elect officers. It was seconded and accepted. Mr Walker was nominated for commander and he also voted in the election. However, it was only after losing to Commander Hernandez the he objected. He was then also nominated for Lt. Commander. He participated in all of the elections and accepted the position of Adjutant. His objection was that a verbal agreement was for 2 years, nothing in writing. He then said he would do what he could for the good of the camp.

He then went and called Mike Moor and David McMahon and started planning the coup of the Lubbock Camp. Next they went to DEC meeting and told that Mike Walker was bushwacked. Stating that our charter and constitution were no good. All of this waqs done to try and get Commander Hernandez to have another election which he agreed to only because without a constitution he had no ground to stand on.

Upon returning from DEC meeting I met with Commander Hernandez and we called General Headquarters to find out about out charter and constitution. We were told that all was good.

So in our EC meeting, which Mr. Walker never responded to in regards to attending, we agreed as EC the elections stood on the grounds we had a charter and constitution.

Clarence Pope

3rd Lt. Commander, 1st Brigade

Lt. Commander, Thomas S Lubbock Camp 1352

June 2014

Exhibit B

SCV CAMP MEETING MARCH 20, 2014

As we arrived at our meeting, David McMahon came out and tried to block entry of an invited guest, Rocky Sprott. Words were exchanged and we went in.

In violation of our ammaneded constitution there were two US Flags in the room, a large one put there by the manager of the restaurant on request of Mike Walker. A smaller one on the table which Randy Alford removed from the room. During the pledges of OCR, Randy Alford and myself, Clarence Pope, gave the Bellamy Salute during the pledge. This is the way it was intended by the writer of the Pledge of Allegiance.

After OCR meeting Commander Hernandez called SCV meeting to order with no objections. Rocky Sprott gave the Invocation and read a Bible verse. Commander Hernandez then called for the swearing in of new officers. At this point David McMahon and Mike Moore jumped up and started yelling at Commander Hernandez. In response members of the camp responded to David McMahon and Mike Moore in the same way, by yelling.

I, Clarence Pope called for a closed meeting, camp members only. Sam and Barbara Cornelius got up and went out of the room, Mr. McMahon was still yelling at Mr. Sprott. I got their attention and Mr. Sprott left the room. Mr. McMahon, however, was asked three times to leave the room and had to be escorted to the door by me at which point he did leave the room.

Mr. Moore never left the room and continued his belligerant yelling until I made the motion to disban the Lubbock camp, which was seconded. Then Mr. Walker and his followers just got up and left, so the motion was tabled till the next meeting.

Mike Moore never adhered to the call for a closed meeting. Afer things calmed down a bit, Commander Hernandez and Mike Moore agreed that the camp should split with Mr. Walker and his followers going to the Plainview camp and Commander Hernandez retaining the Lubbock Camp.

Officers were sworn in by Brigade Chaplain, Rocky Sprott, witnessed by Brigade 2nd Lt. Commander Sam Cornelius.

Mr. McMahon and Mr. Moore disrupted the meeting process which caused the incident at the March 20, 2014 meeting.

3rd Lt. Commander, 1st Brigade

Lt. Commander Thomas S. Lubbock Camp 1352

Clarence Pope

JUNE 2014

Exhibit C

SUMMARY OF EVENTS IN THOMAS S LUBBOCK CAMP 1352

This is my summary as I see it. All of this could and would have been avoided if not for outside interderence from officers of the Texas Division. It was a camp matter.

Yes, I was wrong to do the Bellamy Salute and place the Taylor flag in front of the US Flag. That is all I am guilty of.

Mr. Sprott onlt defended himself and the Lubbock Camp. He did not do the Bellamy Salute or curse after the prayer.

Cecil Pope sat in his chair and did nothing except try to calm things down.

Commander Hernandez tried to run a proper meeting but was interrupted and the meeting disrupted by Mike Moore and David McMahan.

No one of the Lubbock Camp cursed or said Sieg Hiel. The only cursing I heard was done by Mike Moore and Troy Simpson. As Mr. Simpson told Rocky Sprott, "This is all your damned fault."

3rd Lt. Commander, 1st Brigade

Lt. Commander Thomas S ?Lubbock Camp 1352

Clarence Pope

11 DECEMBER 2014

Exhibit D

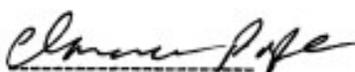
We, the undersigned, were all in attendance at the Thomas S Lubbock camp meeting on 20 March 2014 in Lubbock, Texas. We did not hear Chaplain Rocky Sprott utter the phrase "FUCK YOU" at the conclusion of the invocation. We hereby swear by all that we hold sacred that this statement is true.



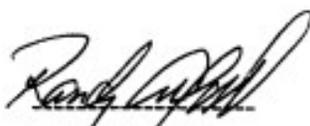
Barbara Cornelius



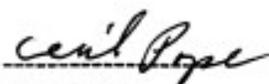
Jocy Hernandez



Clarence Pope



Randy Alford



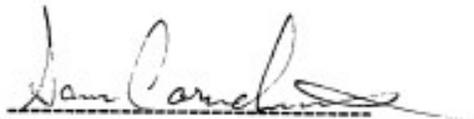
Cecil Pope

11 DECEMBER 2014

Exhibit E

Several things must be made clear while dealing with this topic : 1) Mike Moore has severe hearing loss. On several occasions, while seated shoulder to shoulder with Mike, I have made comments in a normal voice that had to be repeated so that he could hear them. I have also spoken to others who maintain that Mike is all but deaf, and that they had to yell to be heard by him. 2) The room we were in was no larger than an average den roughly 10'x15', also since the invocation had just ended the room was utterly quite. This being the case anything said could have been heard by the whole room. 3) I have known Rocky for several years and have found him to be an honorable man. For Rocky to make a statement like that as part of a prayer would be tantamount to spitting on his Bible or on his religion. 4) In the few years that I have known Mike Moore, I have never known him to make a statement where he DID NOT use the word "FUCK". In the several years that I have known Rocky I have NEVER heard him use the term!

I was in attendance at the March meeting of the Lubbock SCV camp. I did not hear Rocky say "FUCK YOU" nor did I see his lips move after he said AMEN. This is all garbage spewed from the cesspit of Mike Moore's mind.

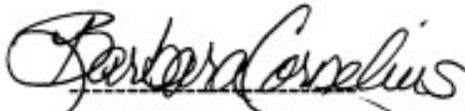


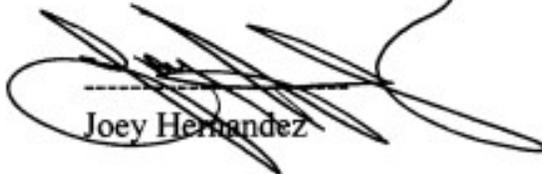
Sam Cornelius

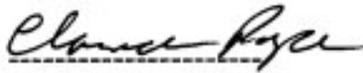
Exhibit F

11 DECEMBER 2014

We, the undersigned, were all in attendance at the Thomas S Lubbock camp meeting on 20 March 2014 in Lubbock, Texas. We did not hear the phrases Heil Hitler, Sieg Heil, uttered at the meeting at anytime. The Bellemy salute was done by two men Randy Alford and Clarence Pope. We hereby swear by all that we hold sacred that this statement is true.

  
Barbara Cornelius

  
Joey Hernandez

  
Clarence Pope

  
Randy Alford

  
Cecil Pope

  
Sam Cornelius

  
Rocky Spratt

# Sam Cornelius responds.....

## Exhibit G

13 JANUARY 2015

Compatriots,

I recently received a copy of Mike Moore's most recent tirade. This tirade was not emailed to me, apparently I have been removed from the list.

One true statement that Mr. Moore made was that my last missive(not a broadside) was dated December 6<sup>th</sup>. It was written on that date and I sat on it, fearing that some would think of it as sour grapes, which it was not. The reason the missive was released when it was, is that I kept being questioned by people from all over the Division as to statements about Rocky and myself. When asked where these statements came from, these people without fail said that they had gotten these statements from Mike Moore. Since Mike was continuing the assault I sent my missive.

Mr. Moore has repeatedly referred to me as a coward for not enlisting in the Military. I spent 15 years working for the Texas Department of Corrections. I was unarmed the majority of those years, this is not a job for a coward. On day in early 1971 I had decided to enlist in the Navy. As I prepared to leave to enlist, my father took me aside and told me that while he respected my decision to enlist, he felt that it was best if I waited until I was drafted. Now I had the highest respect for my father and so I followed his advise. It had nothing to do with cowardice and everything to do with honor and respect for my father. My father was deserving of respect. Unlike Mr. Moore my father was in the fighting Navy. On several occasions the destroyer he was on sailed, at flank speed, between islands with the enemy on both sides firing at them. On another occasion the USS FRAIZER DD-607 also rammed and sank a Japanese submarine, and finally he was listed as MIA presumed dead at the end of the war, because of a radio silent mission at the same time the Atomic bombs were being dropped. Mike on the other hand has bragged that the only danger that he faced were paper cuts and bar fights at night. A great deal of difference there. I can only assume that this and the belief that everything has a time and a place as the reason that Mr. Moore repeatedly maintains that I hate the USA. I most emphatically do not hate the USA on the other hand I am not one that believes that no matter how despicable the action, it's alright if it was done by the US.

It seems that Mr. Moore so loves his idol Barack Obama that he follows similar practices, like attacking people after they are already out of office.

For some reason Mr. Moore feels he must attack those who have helped him. Rocky and I convinced the victims not to file charges when Mike had embezzled money, for this he attacks us. Rocky and I never passed on that Mike always got slobbering drunk at every SCV event, for this he attacks us. Rocky and I convinced others in the group, that Mike staggered up to and bragged, to keep the statements to themselves. At the Victoria SCV gathering, Mike came up to a group that Rocky and I were with. Mike bragged that he was a bi-polar, bi-sexual, liberal democrat and proud of it. For this he attacks us. It seems that the more that Mike Moore is helped the more he feels he must attack those that helped him.

SAM CORNELIUS

21 August 2014

Exhibit H

Dear Sir:

First let me congratulate you on your election to the post of Commander-in Chief of the SCV. I would have liked to have been in Charleston to congratulate you in person. Unfortunately life happens and a lack of funds and an uncomfortable situation prevented such an extended trip.

I don't know if Commander Givens has mentioned me or briefed you about the situation here in Texas. First let me introduce myself. I am Samuel (Sam) Denver Cornelius, Commander of the Plemons-Shelby camp 464 in Amarillo, Texas, that is in the far panhandle of Texas. I am also the 2<sup>nd</sup> Lt Commander of the High Plains Brigade of the Texas Division of the SCV.

I have been a member of the SCV for about 19 years. For most of that time the Amarillo camp was nothing but a social club. About 5 years ago Rocky Jim Sprott transferred his membership to this camp. The two of us hit it off and working together we have pushed the camp to be more active. We are now involved in grave dedications, gun shows educational exhibits and many other things.

The situation here in Texas began when several members of the Thomas S Lubbock camp tried to do the same thing. Unfortunately the camp commander Mike Walker, who I thought of as a friend fought them. When the camp obtained a copy of their constitution from National it was discovered that the camp was several months behind on the election of officers. The camp membership was notified as required by the constitution and at the next meeting elections were held. Mike Walker was deposed and Joe Hernandez was elected. Initially Mike accepted this, but shortly thereafter Mike started crying (literally) to people about how he had been mistreated.

At the March DEC meeting Joe Hernandez and Mike Walker had a meeting with Commander Johnny Holley, and Lt. Commander David McMahan, I was there as an interested observer, hopefully objective, since I had, I thought friends on both sides of the equation. During this conversation Commander Holley maintained that the camp charter and constitution were invalid because the camp had gone dormant for a time. After having made this statement Commander Holley suggested that in March the Lubbock camp have a meeting with no outsiders and work through the problems, Joe and Mike agreed. Also at this meeting Commander requested I talk to Rocky Sprott about alleged interference on Rocky's part, having been at several of those meeting, I did speak to him. Mr Hernandez contacted National and was told that this was wrong and that those documents were valid no matter how many times the camp went dormant. Before the March meeting I began to hear double-sided statements and that the agreement might be breached. Since I had been hearing these double-sided tales I determined to attend this meeting as an impartial observer. Rocky had been invited to give the invocation and benediction since Rocky is the brigade and Amarillo camp chaplain and the Lubbock camp had no chaplain. We were met at the door by David

McMahon who jammed his finger in Rocky's face and shouted that Rocky knew that he had been ordered to stay away. Rocky has better control of his temper than I do and so just told David to get the hell out of the way. I would have broken the finger and given him the cussing that he later claimed Rocky had given him. It seems that Commander Holley had broken his own agreement and sent both Lt Commander McMahon and JAG Mike Moore to disrupt the meeting.

One of the problems that the camp needed to work out was weather to display the US flag and say the pledge of allegiance. One group was adamant that it happen and the other group was just as adamant that it did not.

When we arrived we found that the Holley representatives were already there and from what we were told later had already been stirring up trouble. Because of the tension caused by the presence of Holley's representatives two of the Lubbock camp members overreacted, one of them a Vietnam Veteran with PTSD stormed around the room and removed a US flag and another moved a battle flag in front of the other US flag in the room. Both of these men then proceeded to give a Roman/party salute. I believe that this was a reaction to the Fascist actions of David and Mike. Rocky, Cecil, and myself were trying to calm things down.

<I later heard that it was being told by Mike, David, and Johnny that I had been ordered to order Rocky to stay away---untrue and that all of us had given the "Hitler" salute again---untrue and since that time anything that can be thought of we have been accused of. >

At the Division Reunion it was determined that the accusations had to be investigated by a board from the Division, and that the report would then go to National if there were grounds for action. Unfortunately the investigatory board was packed with Holley's sycophants and they have convinced themselves that they can remove any or all of these men from the SCV. My understanding is that only National can remove a member. Therefore I ask for your help in straightening this mess out.<Also at this DEC meeting Commander Johnny Holley admitted that he **had not** told me to order Rocky not to attend anything. This meant that what he had been saying was a lie as well as the statements by Mike Moore that he overheard that order and that I was a liar>I do not lie and while working for the state I was put on report more than once for telling the truth and not lying. These men that Commander Holley and his crew of sycophants want to kick out are the movers and shakers of this brigade, without them the SCV in these parts will go back to being a group of social clubs making no effort to honor our Ancestors.

Again I ask for your aid and intervention.

Your Servant in the Cause  
Sam Cornelius  
Commander Plemons-Shelby Camp 464  
DUCIT AMOR PATRIAE

## Exhibit I

Some people in the SCV Texas Division Have brought up things from my past. They can't even get that right I was Deferred on drug charges not a conviction never convicted of felon in possession of a fire arm. I do have a conviction of deadly conduct. I have paid my debt but now they want to go on the personal attack. I just want everyone to Know that I don't hide my past but that is what it is my past. So I need all the support of my friends I can get right now. I will not run Fro these low life liars that only want to try and get rid of me it want work. You hit the wrong dog with a stick this time.

*Clarence Page*

*Exhibit J*

The Law Office of

**STANLEY D. HUDSON**

Board Certified Personal Injury Trial Lawyer  
Texas Board of Legal Specialization

Admitted in Texas, Colorado  
& Pennsylvania

4264 West Lovers Lane  
Dallas, TX 75209

Telephone: (214) 526-5300  
Facsimile: (214) 526-5354  
shudson@lawofficeofstanleydhudson.com

December 4, 2014

**VIA CMRRR: 7011 1570 0001 5613 1340**

Mr. Robert N. Jones  
P.O. Box 26  
Chatfield, TX 75105

RE: Rocky Sprott

Dear Rob:

On 10/18/14, I had the pleasure of speaking with Mr. Mike Moore about the "charges" that are currently pending against Mr. Rocky Sprott. On the basis of my conversation with Mr. Moore, I will respond to those charges, as follows:

With regard to the alleged "use of foul and abusive language in public toward Division officers and other members of the SCV," Mr. Moore claimed that Rocky walked up to David McMahon and told him to "go fuck yourself." This is inconsistent with a 5/18/14 letter from Mr. Moore, wherein he claimed that Rocky ended a prayer with "Amen... go fuck yourself." Both versions of this story never happened.

Also, in his 5/18/14 letter, Mr. Moore claimed that Rocky "attacked a division officer in public." However, in our conversation, Mr. Moore admitted that Rocky did not assault anyone.

Ultimately, Mr. Moore complained that the Lubbock election was illegal due to its timing and a lack of notice, that Rocky used his position as Chaplain in order to interfere with the Lubbock election, and that it was not proper for Rocky to be in Lubbock when his purpose was to interfere with the camp's election.

First, under § 4.6.1. of the Texas Division Constitution, "All Camps shall have the full enjoyment of the Right to govern themselves, provided that they shall be subject to this constitution, the General constitution and amendments and Standing Orders thereof." There is nothing in the National Constitution or the Division Constitution which concerns the timing and notice of camp elections. Therefore, the individual camp remains autonomous with respect to these matters.

With regard to any alleged interference with the Lubbock election, Rocky had the right to express his opinions and the right to choose his candidate, regardless of whether or not he was a voting member of the camp. That is a part of the democratic process. In taking any part in this process, Rocky was acting in an individual capacity, and not in his capacity as Chaplain. Had Mr. Moore actually believed that Rocky was misusing his position as Chaplain, he could have attempted to remove him from this office. Instead, Mr. Moore decided to bring very serious charges against Rocky, as an individual.

Under § 3.5 of the Texas Constitution, "Every Compatriot in the Texas Division in good standing will be privileged to attend meetings of any Organization within the Texas Division and to receive the

December 3, 2014  
Page 2 of 2

fraternal consideration it is designed to foster." Therefore, under this section, Rocky had an absolute right to attend the Lubbock meeting.

If expressing opinions and choosing a political side are offenses, then Mike Moore and David McMahon are equally guilty of these crimes as well. However, the conduct of Mr. Moore and Mr. McMahon went far beyond that.

Among other things, these gentlemen violated § 4.6.1 of the Texas Division Constitution by ostensibly using their official capacities to actively and physically deny the Lubbock camp members "the full enjoyment of the Right to govern themselves." Further, these gentlemen violated § 3.5 by denying Rocky the privilege of attending the Lubbock meeting and to receive the fraternal consideration that the Sons of Confederate Veterans is designed to foster.

Despite warnings to stop the slanderous attacks against Rocky, Mr. Moore continues to engage in such acts. During our conversation on 11/18/14, Mr. Moore claimed that Rocky ignored Commander Holley's charges by failing to file a response. This is a false representation in that Rocky filed his response on 10/29/14. A copy of the response is enclosed herein.

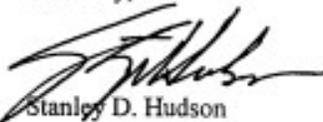
Further, I understand that Mr. Moore claimed that Rocky filed a lawsuit against the Sons of Confederate Veterans. This is another false, vicious, and malicious rumor which was designed to discredit Rocky and to create bias and prejudice against him. As you probably know, Rocky has not filed a lawsuit against the SCV. Lawsuits, if any, will most likely be filed against those individuals who continue to engage in intentional acts that are not authorized by our organization and its Constitutions.

The contents of this letter represent the relevant portions of my conversation with Mr. Moore. If there are any additional misrepresentations which form the basis of the charges against Rocky, I cannot fathom them at this time. Therefore, pursuant to § 13.3.5 of the Constitution, I am again requesting a letter which includes any evidence and findings of the Disciplinary Committee and the date, time and location of the Executive Council Meeting that will hear the charges against Rocky.

Lastly, in our conversation on 11/18/14, Mr. Moore told me that he wrote a letter to Commander Holley which sets forth the details concerning his grievances against Rocky. Although Mr. Moore promised to send me a copy of this letter, I have yet to receive it. Since this letter should be a part of the evidence that you have uncovered, I am respectfully requesting a copy of this correspondence in accord with § 13.3.5.

Thank you for your kind consideration of this matter. I look forward to hearing from you prior to any DLC meeting which will address the charges in question.

Sincerely,



Stanley D. Hudson

SDH/mj  
Enclosure  
cc: Rocky Sprott

10 MARCH 2014

## Exhibit K

Col. Thomas S. Lubbock  
Camp #1352  
Sons of Confederate Veterans

After the D.E.C. Meeting Mr. Mike Walker and Mr. David McMahon, upon their bond, swore to Mr. Joseph Hernandez that the Lubbock Camp Constitution was void since the 1980's and thereby Mr. Hernandez could no longer use the Constitution as a viable defense from their attacks.

A deal was struck to have another vote that was predicated on the condition that the Lubbock Camp had no Constitution. Nominations would be held in March and Election in April.

The following Monday, a call was made to Bryan Sharp at National Headquarters; who pulled the records indicating the Lubbock Camp indeed has a valid Charter and Constitution. This proves yet another lie that was perpetrated by Mr. Walker and Mr. McMahon.

The Executive Council, by the power of the Constitution (Article VI Section 1 Part C *'Rule on all questions affecting the election, eligibility, and conduct of members.'*) The Executive Council made a decision that the election was valid and there will be no need for a second election.

Rule on all questions affecting the election..... is taken directly from the Sample ByLaws provided by Nationals and was amended to the Lubbock Camp Constitution on February 2014.

The Executive Council further derives its authority from the following:

From the National SCV Constitution,  
All Camps shall have the full enjoyment of the right to govern themselves, provided that they shall be subject to this Constitution and the Standing Orders of the Confederation. Each Camp shall be the judge of its own members, subject to the provisions of this Constitution and Standing Orders.

From the Texas SCV Constitution,  
All Camps shall have the full enjoyment of the Right to Govern Themselves.

If we in fact have the Right to Self Govern then the Executive Council stands by their decision that Mr. Joseph Hernandez is the Commander of the Col. Thomas S. Lubbock Camp.

Executive Council  
Col. Thomas S Lubbock  
Camp #1352  
Sons of Confederate Veterans

Exhibit 6.

HAND DELIVERED MAY 18, 2014

Dear Rocky,

I have not wanted to duel with you and Sam and your acolytes in Lubbock on the internet, and this is being prepared to give to our Amarillo members at the May 18 meeting. This is in response to Sam's two emails and to your long, rambling incoherent handwritten letter dated April 17 and mailed on May 6. In your letter, you told me that I was a disgrace to my Confederate ancestors because I have "joined the Liberal (media) Conspiracy" and I don't see any upside to having a public fight in Houston over the flag and pledge issue; also, because I don't share your extreme hatred of the United States or its government. You threatened to retaliate if I did anything to harm your image with the SCV. Coming from me, the most hurtful thing I could do to you is to accuse you of being sane, and I'm not going to do that.

Insulting

Rocky, I really do appreciate all the time and effort you have spent on the grave registration survey and have enjoyed all we have learned and the time we have spent together. In the last few months you've become erratic and frankly crazy in your extreme political views. I thank the Lord that we are a nonpolitical organization, as your extreme views would run off about 98% of our members.

Not True  
Insulting

Let's review a few facts, as I see them:

1. The SCV Camp Procedure Manual (Section 9) says that the camp meetings should be opened with the display of and pledge to the U. S., state and Confederate flags, and that all flags should be treated with respect.
2. In January, there was some heated discussion at the Texas Division exec committee meeting in Lorena (near Waco) and I called you from Dallas on the way home with my concerns. You confirmed that you and the Pope brothers didn't want to do the flag/pledge in Lubbock and I told you I had no problem with that, if it could be done without causing a major, permanent disruption within the Camp, and you gave me your word about that. A month later all hell broke loose in that Camp at their

Not True  
Not a Requirement

Not True

regular meeting. In violation of the Texas SCV Constitution, you got your "flag haters" to pack the meeting and demand and conduct an improper election to get rid of Commander Mike Walker. I called you the next day and you took credit for your manipulation of the Lubbock camp.

Not True

3. In violation of his agreement in Lorena to allow a new election to be conducted in April, you and Joey Hernandez completely ignored that agreement. There was a legitimate disagreement over the validity of the improper election in February but Joey ended up calling everyone else liars, including his legitimate camp commander and Texas Division 3<sup>rd</sup> Lt. Commander Dave McMahon. How can anybody trust Joey in the future when he calls his superiors "liars" over a disagreement when he's only been an SCV member for a few months, and is obviously just a nonthinking tool in your hands like the Pope brothers?

Not True

4. More than half of the Lubbock camp members have transferred membership to Plainview to get away from your flag-hating friends in Lubbock. You told Gaylan Harrison that you only wanted the wishes of the majority of the Lubbock members to be obeyed. Obviously since there was no election as agreed, the majority "voted with their feet" and left.

Not True

5. You and Sam initially ignored the Nazi salute and then Sam sent an email to everyone in the Panhandle trying to justify the Nazi salute, even though they were in Confederate uniforms and one of your buddies hollered "Sieg heil". This was in a crowded restaurant, with a church group sitting around the corner where they could hear every word.

You say that I'm a coward because I don't think we ought to air our flag/pledge disagreements in public in Houston. How much do you think you helped the Cause by your disgraceful and disrespectful public actions in Lubbock?

Not True

6. I didn't know that you and Sam had met for 3 hours with Joey and the insurgents before the meeting until Sam put it into a report. He also said Randy Alford only acted out, hid Old Glory and threatened me because of PTSD and because I aggravated

him. We had all just gotten there, I said hello to Randy, and then five minutes later he blew up and hid the flag, etc.

I didn't know that PTSD could turn you into a Nazi, but that's Sam's position.

- Not True
7. Sam also ignored Commander Holley's order to stay out of the Lubbock camp's business and to tell you to do the same, and there were witnesses to that conversation. He now doesn't remember a word of it. Either Sam is a liar, deaf, or he at least has extremely selective hearing.
  8. I have very much enjoyed our political discussions over the years, and a lot of my beliefs are more liberal than the mainstream of the SCV. When it comes to dislike of media and political hatred of everything Confederate you and I share the same view.

Not True

You have told me that you don't think women or blacks should be allowed to vote, voting should be limited to those owning real estate, and it should still be unlawful to teach blacks to read. You use the Bible to justify slavery and you disagree with child labor laws. All of those views are way out of mainstream America. Simply put, you want to ignore or reverse every positive thing which has occurred in the last 150 years, and I don't. That doesn't mean I have any less love and respect for my Confederate ancestors.

- Not True
9. I especially decry your use of your position as Brigade Chaplain to preach sedition and hatred of our country and our government. You write these long letters quoting scripture, justifying your actions, but in truth and in fact you are a disgrace to your church and your alleged faith. You have less Christian charity, decency and compassion than the average black kid growing up in the Detroit ghetto. When you attacked a division officer in public, read a five-minute Bible passage about understanding and reconciliation and ended a prayer with "Amen..... go fuck yourself", you showed your true hatefulness and hypocrisy. I am extremely disappointed in you.

10. Brigade Chaplain is an appointed position. Because you have so misused your position to cause hatred, break your word to me and cause a permanent split in the Lubbock camp, I have the right to remove you as Chaplain. So far I have chosen not to do so because I don't want to make the situation in Lubbock any worse. If you were half the Christian you claim to be, you should have immediately apologized for the actions of yourself and your followers and started mending fences. Instead, you started calling your fellow "flag haters" in East Texas to try to make yourself their hero and started campaigning for Confederate of the Year.

Not True

It was only after you heard that your actions had been reported to our superiors that you started backtracking, but you still keep trying to excuse your actions.

I am putting you on notice right now that continuing your hateful, deceitful and disrespectful actions will result in your immediate removal as Brigade Chaplain.

11. Sam, you have worked hard as Camp Commander and I appreciate your efforts. I wish you didn't share a few of Rocky's views. We have all worked hard to build this Camp and Brigade and what should have been a minor issue has blown the Lubbock camp apart. Rocky accuses me of being a coward, but neither of you had the guts to serve in the military. I don't appreciate some of the things you have said and insinuated in your emails, but I will try to get along with you in the future.

Not True

12. Lastly, Rocky, please stop writing your long, rambling, ignorant and preachy letters to our Division Commander and everybody else. You are only making your problems worse.

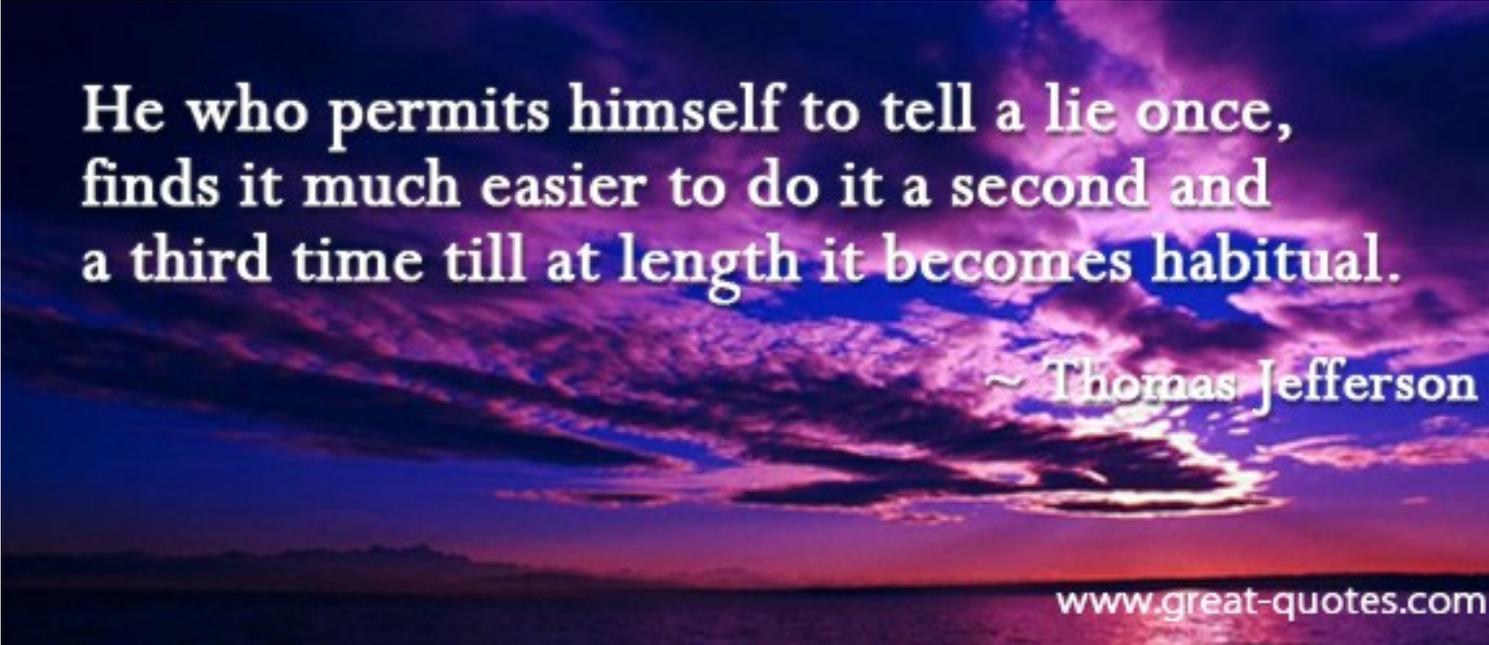
Not True  
Suru My

In the service of our Fathers,

*Mike Moore*

Mike Moore  
High Plains Brigade Commander

P. S. A major problem I am having right now is the emotional investment in the SCV and the fact that nothing is as enjoyable since we are at odds with each other. I feel that you let a very small issue, which could have easily been corrected by a little better communication, destroy a lot of what we have all worked hard to build. All we can do is try to learn from this and move forward.



He who permits himself to tell a lie once,  
finds it much easier to do it a second and  
a third time till at length it becomes habitual.

~ Thomas Jefferson

[www.great-quotes.com](http://www.great-quotes.com)

INBOX   Compose   Addresses   Folders   Options

Current Folder: Drafts Calendar   Help   Search

---

Logged in as: [rsrott@xit.net](#) Sign Out

All Msgs  
 Delete  
 Resume Draft  
 Back  
 Forward  
 Fwd as Att.  
 Reply  
 Reply All

**Subject:** Mike Moore's Letter to Rocky Sprott May 18,2014  
**From:** rsrott@xit.net  
**Date:** Fri, January 16, 2015 8:57 pm  
**To:** shudson@lawofficeofstanleyhudson.com  
**Priority:** Normal

**Options:** [View Full Header](#) | [View Printable Version](#) | [Download this as a file](#) | [Add to Addressbook](#) | [View Message details](#)

Exhibit M

Jan. 16,2015 Frisco Creek  
Sherman Co.  
Occupied Texas

Dear Compatriots

On May 18th, 2014, Mike Moore distributed to the members of the Plemons -Shelby Camp 464 in Amarillo, Texas a letter which contained many untrue statements about myself and other compatriots in the Texas Division. I have never made any formal response to Mr. Moore's letter but I feel that his attempt to misrepresent me and other good men in the Texas Division should be exposed.

In June of last year at the Division Reuion in Houston, Mr. Moore approached me with tears in his eyes asking me to forgive him for publishing this letter. This of course was very touching and I assured him that we would always be friends even though at the time I wasn't sure how that would work out. Unfortunately less than an hour later Jim Cagle from Pampa and Sandra Barnes from Amarillo informed me that Mr. Moore was flashing this same letter before them in an attempt to injure my reputation and credibility. Since then Mr. Moore has repeatedly tried to convince many of my compatriots of the validity of his assertions about me and others that compose the substance of this letter.

- Let me simply take each point he tries to make in turn.
1. That I hate the United States or its government.  
NOT TRUE!
  2. That I threatened to retaliate against him.  
NOT TRUE!
  3. That the flag protocol outlined in the Camp Procedural Handbook is mandatory for all camps.  
NOT TRUE!
  4. That I ever had at anytime any control over or ability to influence the elections in the Col. Thomas S. Lubbock Camp.  
NOT TRUE!

“  
One lie is enough  
to question all  
truths”

Anonymous  
8 July 2009 1:27 pm

## Elections in the Lubbock camp

[Clarence Pope](#)

Mr. Walker was in violation by not having election in December. So if you look at it there was a 60 notice of pending elections. A call for amendment vote was made in January which gives 30 day notice. Then amendments were sent out 10 days prior to vote our constitution calls for 7 days. So the election in Feb. was legal.

Next the agreement to hold a new election was because Division officers said we had no constitution. Which was a blatant lie.

As for returning camp to members and officers. I Clarence Pope would still be Lt Commander and Cecil Pope 2nd Lt Commander. We had no adjutant because Troy Simpson had resigned. So only change by election was Walker to adjutant and Hernandez to Commander. Which Walker Took advantage of and transferred members out of camp and lied saying there was not a Lubbock camp anymore. Then he resigned. So if Rocky and Sam were wrong then Walker was too.

Now to the march meeting. Only two men did the Bellamy salute and no one said seig heil. Mike Moore's prejudice to Germans is the only reason he and McMahon added that to the report. Rocky never told anyone to f you or anything like that. Before the meeting McMahon tried to block Rocky from the meeting and he told him to go to hell. The only one using the f word was JAG Mike Moore.

Now the flag issue . There was no need for a vote because a amendment was added and approved unanimously to cover that. So the only ones that should be dealt with are Moore and McMahon.

# Compatriot Rudy Ray

## Takes a Principled Stand

Compatriot Rudy Ray, of the John H Reagan Camp 2156 in Palestine, recently stepped down as Commander. In this report, he gives his principled reasons and discusses the critical issues facing the SCV and what we must do if we are to save our heritage and our organisation.

### To Any and All Interested Parties: (some have inquired) Statement of My Resignation As The John H. Reagan Camp Commander

On January 20<sup>th</sup>, 2015 I resigned as Commander of the John H. Reagan #2156 SCV Camp here in Palestine, Texas. I had served the Camp as Commander in 2014 and had been unanimously re-elected as Commander for 2015. This last December (2014) I wrote, as Commander of the Reagan Camp and as I do every month, an article for the Commander's Dispatch in our Reagan Camp Newsletter. The article was Titled **Christmas In Dixie**(see attachment [below]) and it was an appeal for the SCV to be more militant in the Fulfilling of our Charge and the vindicating of the Cause for which our Fathers fought.

The article became the center of controversy between myself and several other leading members of the Camp. In our ensuing discussion I set forth my vision and direction that I as Commander wanted to see the Reagan Camp move towards in the coming year. Here was the vision in its immediate context as I sent it to the other Reagan Camp Leaders involved in the controversy. The *vision* itself is word for word as sent to the other leaders (see attachment).

There were five other Reagan leaders involved in this controversy and who I sent this "vision" and proposal to. Three came out and flatly and plainly declared that they did not agree with my vision. One asked for further clarification and after receiving such gave no further significant answer though he did indicate "some" agreement with me. Another member never responded. Thus it became very clear that the vision and direction that I strongly held to for the SCV including the Reagan Camp was not the vision and direction that several other leaders of the Camp held to. Upon this becoming clear I decided to tender my resignation as Commander of the Camp. I strongly believe that though leaders of a camp may, can, and indeed often do hold different views about many things, it is vital that they hold the same view in regard to the basic vision and direction for the Camp. I believe the Reagan Camp deserves to have a Commander whose vision for the Camp is more in line with the other leader's vision.

As I have stated but it bears stating again, I hold strongly to the need for the SCV to be Reformed/Unreconstructed, to become more militant about the Charge and in particular the vindication of the Cause and in doing this to get the Federal Flag at the very least out of its prominent place in our Camps and to get the Bellamy/Lincolnian/Progressive Pledge that is diametrically opposed to the vindication of the Cause completely out of the SCV and I will as long as I am a member of the SCV labor to see this happen by means of education, discussion, debate, etc. I believe, that if the SCV is not radically reformed and does not become more understanding of and devoted to its Charge and the "vindicating of the Cause", that it will in another twenty to thirty years cease to exist. At the same time, I recognize, that for whatever reason, there are numerous good SCV men and camps who are not "there" yet, who do not yet see the dire need for a radical reformation, and I will seek as much as I am able to respect these men and camps and to be glad at the good that they do for the Cause.

Rudy Ray  
Palestine, Texas

"I won't be reconstructed and I do not give a damn."

DEO VINDICE!

# **Christmas In Dixie**

## **December 1864 Dixie**

*Silent night, Holy night. All is calm, all is bright.*

**So our Southern Fathers and Mothers sang one hundred and fifty years ago. But as they sang this Christmas Hymn and celebrated as best they could, the truth was that there was nothing silent, holy, calm, or bright about their homeland. In December of 1864 Dixie was under siege on every hand. In the West what was left of Hood's Army was about to be destroyed at Nashville. Sherman who had just destroyed Atlanta was now laying siege to Savannah and he then would turn up to South Carolina to rape and pillage that State. And Lee's noble Army of Northern Virginia was under terrible siege at Petersburg. So as our ancestors celebrated Christmas in 1864 and sang their carols they could hear the shells of yankee cannons exploding all around them.**

**Finally, the following spring of 1865 the Confederate armies surrendered. They stacked their arms and furled their colors. They gave up the military effort to obtain independence.**

## **December 2014 Dixie**

*Silent night, Holy night. All is calm, all is bright.*

**As we celebrate Christmas and sing our hymns we too can hear the yankee guns raining their shot and shells down upon us. Listen to the thunder of the guns that have and are coming down in Lexington, Virginia; Memphis, Tennessee; Oxford, Mississippi, and right here in Texas. Our Fathers surrendered their arms and ceased to resist the Yankees military machine but they utterly, almost to a man, refused to surrender their Cause with its values, beliefs, and way of life. Thus because of Southern men and women from 1861 on continuing to fight for their ideas, beliefs, and way of life; continuing to advocate, propagate, and vindicate the Cause, we today here in Dixie still have a fight to fight. Do we understand this December of 2014 that Dixie remains under siege? Do we realize, do we in the SCV and UDC realize and believe that the war rages on? And not only do we have the sound of the enemies guns in our ears but we also have the terrible grief of compromise and betrayal such as we saw and see in Richmond, Virginia with the sellout of the Museum of the Confederacy wrought by scalawags, traitors, and those with divided loyalties who dilly dally with the Yankees and scalawags, who in various ways attempt**

**to make our Heritage palatable and acceptable to the PC crowd, who are more concerned with PR than they are with vindicating the Cause. Indeed in many instances our leaders in the SCV, who through either ignorance or cowardice or self-interest compromise with our enemies by being not only members of the Sons of Confederate Veterans but also members of the Sons of the Union. Somebody please tell me how one can vindicate the Cause and support the very people who stand for those who fought against our Cause?**

**Let me be very frank. I enjoy being in the SCV. I enjoy the society, the friendships. I enjoy the ceremonies and reenactments and parades and balls etc, etc. I do (for the most part) have fun in the SCV. But, BUT, that is not why I am in the SCV! NO! NO! NO! I am in the SCV to fight!!!! To fight the enemies of Dixie! To fight and never stack arms and furl our colors. Whether those enemies of the Cause are from within- turncoats, traitors, cowards, compromisers, scalawags, etc; or from without- yankees, progressives, liberals, neo-cons, etc. The day I quit or refuse to fight, to advocate, propagate, and vindicate the Cause, I am not worthy of being in the SCV. The day the SCV, be it camp, division, national, or whatever, quits or refuses to fight the fight will be the day that I quit the SCV.**

**Let me be even more blunt. Every SCV member should be in the SCV to fight! In the early 1980s in one of the State Prison Units in the South there was a war going on between the developing gangs and the Administration. There was fighting, serious fighting every day. It is reported that, at that time, at that unit, whenever someone was interviewed as a possible Security Officer he was taken into a room and was made to fight a chosen inmate. If that prospect would not or could not fight he was not hired. When we recruit members into the SCV we should make sure that they understand the fight we are in and we need to make as sure as we can that they will and can fight our fight. We have been very loose on who we recruit into the SCV. This needs to stop. As a result we have many SCV members who do not help us in the fight. Now, I am aware that we cannot attempt to go around and cull out the cowards and slackers among us and so I will not even attempt to do so. But I will make this appeal- if you do not want to fight please do not join the SCV and if you are in the SCV and you do not want to fight please get out and if you will not do that than at the very least get out of the way of those of us are in the fight. RR**

## **Resignation Attachment 2**

### **The Charge and The Vindication of the Cause**

I believe the SCV exists by and for the fulfilling of the Charge and that everything we do or do not do has that Charge in mind and in view. The Charge “constitutes” the SCV. And I believe and can make a case for the fact that the vindication of the Cause of the Southern Confederacy is what “constitutes” the Charge. The Charge with its vindication of the Cause is the ruling document of the SCV. I understand we have actual constitutions that deal with procedure, order, etc and they are necessary but the Charge with its Cause is more basic to the SCV than are any National, State, or local Constitution. Can there be differences of interpretations and applications of the Charge, i.e. disagreements? No doubt there can be and are but are these differences and disagreements legitimate? Perhaps. But, if such differences of interpretation and application are too significant than it in essence will gut any practical meaning of the Charge and the Charge will be nothing but a sentimental symbolic relic. There has to be some objective meaning of the Charge and its cause or the whole thing becomes whatever anybody wants it to mean and off we go into “la la” land. Whatever ones interpretation and application is of the Charge and the Cause one should be able to make a legitimate case for such from both history and the Charge itself. AND, and this is important for the question we are considering, for men to effectively fulfill the Charge and vindicate the Cause in a local camp there must be a significant shared interpretation and application, especially among the core members and leaders.

### **The Commander and Commanders in the SCV**

I view the Commander Positions/Offices in an SCV Camp as one of leading. In one sense the word Commander or Commanders is a misnomer. It is a military term and means one thing in the military and another thing in the SCV. We do not “command” anybody and Marc and I have seen first hand what happens when an SCV Commander does not understand this. We Commanders in the SCV “lead”. Yes, we each have some other functions but primarily we lead by word and by actions.

SCV Commanders, be they National Commanders, Division Commanders, Brigade Commanders, or Camp Commanders lead their respective entities in the fulfilling of the Charge which means they lead in the interpreting and applying of the Charge, in the vindicating of the Cause. For an SCV entity, again whether it be National, Local, or anything in between, to be effective there must be a basic shared understanding of the Charge and its Cause. Leaders and members need to have a shared vision and at least a plan of applying that vision that all can heartily agree with. And the entity that this shared vision and agreement is most vital to is the Local Camp because that is where most of the work of fulfilling the Charge is accomplished. A camp to be effective needs to have Lt. Commanders and a Commander that the core of the Camp believes and agrees in their leading in the fulfilling of the Charge and the vindicating of the Cause. This does not mean that the leaders themselves and/or the core members will so agree as to dot every (i) or cross every (t) alike but it does mean that they are in a basic and significant agreement, shared vision, and application.

### **The Current Crisis in the SCV**

There is a crisis in the entire SCV and it is an identity crisis. The SCV is working out who and what we are and what we are about. I will not in this letter go into the long history of this crisis, though I can do so and in doing so I can date that crisis back to the UCV itself. I did this some in my Program titled *Reconstruction and The Current Crisis In The SCV*. Suffice it for this letter to say the following about this crisis:

It broke out in the “Grannies vs Radicals” conflict of the late 1990s and early 2000s. A number of SCV members from the “Grannies” side left the SCV and some of them formed the *DCV, Descendants of Confederate Veterans*. It is interesting and educational to note that in the DCV there MUST be a Federal Flag and the Bellamy Pledge to that flag in every official DCV meeting/event. Also it is interesting to note that the DCV has no charge from the UCV (and therefore they pretty much can do or be whatever they decide to do or be). They do however have a rule that no “secessionist” can be a member of the DCV so I am out of luck, not that I’m looking to join this bunch. The Grannies/Radicals disagreement involved politics and control of the SCV but it had ideological roots. In a nutshell the Grannies believed the Radicals to be too militant about the fulfilling of the Charge and the Radicals believed the Grannies to be too compromised and timid in the fulfilling of the Charge.

Though some Grannies, or those who leaned towards the Grannies, left the SCV many of them did not. Fast forward to today and the current crisis which I think we could call the Flag/Pledge disagreement. Many in the SCV believe that the presence of the Federal Flag and the prominent place it is given and especially the Bellamy/Socialist/Lincolnian Pledge to it is contrary to the Charge and its vindication of the Cause. Others in the SCV for various reasons want, some very strongly want, indeed demand that the US Flag and its Pledge remain in the SCV. There are other SCV members who basically don’t care too much one way or another. This is an issue all over the SCV and it especially is here in Texas.

In Texas this hotly debated issue, whose roots are in the interpretation and application of the Charge, has broken out into a very ugly and contentious “debacle”. The affair known as the Lubbock Affair or Lubbock Flap, has its roots in the Flag/Pledge issue, though it has become a Command/Abuse of Power Issue. I will not go into that in this paper.

Before the Lubbock Affair broke out the general agreement among Texas SCV men and camps was that this Flag/Pledge Issue was an individual and local camp issue. However there were some in Division Command who were not content with leaving it up to camps but who tried to use their Division Positions to push their own agenda of securing the place of the Federal Flag and its Pledge. Marc and I both tried to intervene because we both saw that if this was pursued by Division Command the way that they were pursuing it that there would be an ugly split along the lines of the Flag/Pledge Issue. Unfortunately Division Command has continued to pursue this relentlessly for almost a year and the result is that the disagreement between camp members and camps has been thrust upon us. Again, the Lubbock Flap goes way beyond the Flag/Pledge Issue but that Flap has lended itself to the speeding up of the disagreement over the Flag and its Pledge. More on this later but my position in a nutshell is that I do believe that the prominent place of the Federal Flag in the SCV and especially the Lincolnian Pledge indeed is antithetical to our Charge and therefore has no place in any SCV event. However I do not advocate “legislating” this into the SCV but rather “educating” it in, member by member, camp by camp, brigade by brigade, state by state until the SCV is thoroughly cleansed of this foreign object in its midst. Do I think this can be done? Yes. Do I think that it will be done? If God wills it. How soon will it be done in my opinion? Probably gradually though it is happening faster than many think right here in Texas. There are a number of Camps who used to have the Flag and its Pledge but have now been educated and have voted it out. There also are new camps being formed out of old camps that have in essence “seceded” from camps over the Flag/Pledge Issue.

In my view the Flag/Pledge issue is not THE issue itself. Very much like Slavery was not THE issue between the sections but was merely the occasion, the lightning rod where THE issue met, so the Flag/Pledge Issue is where two different understandings of the Charge meet. The Flag/Pledge Issue is where the more basic disagreement in the SCV meets. THE issue is how we look at the Charge and particularly at the vindication of the Cause and how we view the United States since the War and how we view our relationship with and our attitude towards the current USA. I am speaking here in very general and broad terms and not at all saying that everybody who is a “Pledger” or everybody who is a

“Vindicator” or non-pledger all think exactly alike on this but it is a general description of the disagreement. The two disagreeing sides usually manifest their differences in not only the place of the Flag/Pledge but also in such things as to how militant we need to be, what our attitude towards secession is today, our attitude towards the League of the South, Flagging, etc.

## My Vision For the SCV and In Particular For Any and All SCV Camps Including the Reagan Camp

Hopefully all can see the method to my madness for sharing all the other things above. I apologize for the length of this letter but I deem it necessary for us to make a good decision in regard to the Command of the Reagan Camp.

It is not hard for anyone who has been around me just a little to know which side of the current disagreement I stand on and stand on very solidly. That does not mean that I fully agree with anybody or everybody that stands with me on this side but I do basically agree with those who take this side. It is this basic view of the Charge and the vindication of the Cause that supplies me with my vision which is:

1. The Federal Flag, if in the SCV at all, should not have the prominent place as it sends the message that the US was right in the War. It is a continual reminder that we lost the War. I am well aware that we lost the War. Every time I drive by the Federal PO or the Courthouse or dozens of other places I am reminded. Every time I pay the Unconstitutional Income Tax I am reminded. Every time I observe the BS in both DC and Austin I am reminded. Every time I see the racial tensions and the poor plight of Lincoln’s Freedmen I am reminded. I do NOT appreciate coming to the monthly SCV Camp Meeting and being reminded! My vision is to get it out of the SCV altogether but for sure out of the prominent place. My process or method to achieve this part of my vision is education- programs, teaching, reading, discussing, debating and then deciding to do it, not just with a mere majority but with a clear majority deciding.
2. The Lincolnian Pledge of Allegiance needs to be removed from the SCV altogether as it is diametrically contrary to our Charge and indeed to the original USA and its founders. I would be opposed to it if there was no SCV but I especially abhor it in the SCV. The process to get it out would be the same as stated above.
3. Education, Education, Education- in and out of the Camp and especially educating about the Cause and its relevance to today. I have a vision of more hard hitting programs that deal with the issues of the Secession/War and of its relevance for us today; programs such as the one Tom Ridenuor and Donnie Kennedy brought, etc.
4. I have a vision of the SCV and of the Reagan Camp being more militant- in its mindset and in its actions. THAT really was what the disputed Dispatch was about. What practical action would display a more militant mindset? Well, indeed the Flagging Issue comes to mind. Yes, I think Flagging as done and in the spirit of the Va Flaggers has its place in the SCV and could have its place in the Reagan camp depending on circumstances/situations calling for it. In my opinion the Va Flaggers have put the SCV to shame. The SCV should have been the one’s Flagging the places in Va where the Flags had been removed. We could learn a lot from those Flaggers and though there are some in the SCV who either oppose or shy away from the Flaggers there are some of us who fully support and join them. I have no particular Flagging activities/events in mind for the Reagan Camp but if such situations came up and warranted it I would want the Reagan Camp to lead the way. That does NOT mean that I would at all expect every Camp Member to grab a flag on the front lines. But it does mean that the leadership and core of the Camp would be behind properly done Flagging.

The Progressives including the left wing liberals and the right wing neo-cons are in an all-out war against us, to lesser or greater degrees. We cannot hold onto our Heritage if we try to be “too”

polite. Now don't go jumping on that statement without hearing what I mean. I am NOT for physical violence unless we are physically assaulted and then only to defend ourselves. I am NOT for being rude or obnoxious or impolite as such. But I am for not worrying about people thinking that we are too radical or whatever. MY position and attitude of PR is to do and say and be right and let God worry about our reputation among men. I really do not give a damn what the Progressive Yankees and Southern Scalawags think or say about me or our Camp or the SCV. All other things being equal the more we are fulfilling the charge the more we will be talked about and a good bit of that talk will be negative. Take it to the bank.

5. My vision for the SCV is to confront the Slavery/Race Issue head on without flinching. To not spin it in any way (North or South) but to deal with it openly and honestly and according to the Historical record; taking the position that the vast majority of those whom we represent took on it which was the Bible Position. Yes, we must be wise in this area as in all areas but our wisdom must not be a cloak for or turn into cowardice or spin or dodge. THAT is the mentality on this issue that I will take as a Commander or a mere member.
6. I do envision an SCV that is more selective in its receiving members but not overly strict or harsh but simply letting the prospects know about who and what we are about and the kind of things that being a member in the SCV might put them into. I have no real particular procedures in mind but I would like to generally see that.
7. I would like to see us be more careful, at every level, of who we put into leadership, especially into Command. Because we are a volunteer organization and nobody gets paid we fall into the trap of electing almost any and all men into leadership who are willing to do it. This is a recipe for disaster. And as a post note to this point, I do NOT want to be the Commander because nobody else wants it or is willing to do it.

That pretty well sums up my vision. In order for me to be willing to continue as Commander I would want each of you and every one of you to be able to say that you are on board with my vision and the direction you would want the camp to move in. This of course does not mean that you or I know all the particular strategies or methods that I or you for that matter would advocate or that we have to now or then agree on the particulars but I do believe that we all need to have the same basic vision for the SCV and for the Reagan Camp.

I think that it is unhealthy for a Camp to try to function with different visions among the leaders. As an example I think it is unhealthy to have some of the members/leaders recite the Bellamy Pledge and others to obviously refuse to recite it. There are points, lesser points where we can hold differing opinions and maybe even practices but there are other important issues where at the very least the leadership of the Camp needs to be of like-mindedness.

So, if ya'll are not, all of you, on board with me than I do not want to be the Commander. It would not be a healthy situation for me or more importantly for the Camp. That does not mean that ya'll are bad people who are traitors or scalawags or cowards or whatever. It means we have different visions and understanding of the Charge and its Cause and the SCV itself. Yes, there are some in the SCV who are cowards and traitors etc but I consider none of ya'll to be in that category at all. If you choose to have another Commander I will support the Reagan Camp as much as I can while at the same time seeking to reform the SCV in whatever way I can. I will not in any way oppose you though I will continue, not in the Camp, to advocate against the Pledge and for more militancy, flagging, etc. I think that the SCV, and it is already happening, is going to begin to have more and more Camps with two basic different outlooks on what it means to fulfill the Charge. Whatever we tag the different camps- Pledger or Chargers, or Reconstructed or Unreconstructed or Grannies or Radicals or whatever, we are going to see two different types of camps in the SCV. How different? That will vary but I am NOT at war with those who do a good job of fulfilling the Charge thru Dedications and Memorials, Plazas, Programs, Parades, etc. Now I will tell you that if ya'll or anybody else in the SCV shies away from the flying of the Battle Flag, unless it is at

the point of a bayonet as none of us today know what we would do then, but if any SCV member or Camp furls their Battle Flags they will be to me scalawags or cowards or traitors and I will treat them as such. I do not envision any of ya'll doing that.

So here is my proposal to ya'll. ( I am available if anybody has any specific clarification issues.) Ya'll can discuss this among yourselves and decide. I will NOT be offended or hurt if ya'll want someone else who is more in line with ya'lls vision. Whatever is decided for me to continue as Commander I need a unanimous decision from ya'll, you that have been privy to this entire discussion of the Dispatch article who I consider the leaders of the camp. If even one of you is not on board with my vision then you will need to find another Commander. Marc is a good Commander and Dwight and David and Gary would make good Commanders and Dan is a good one too if he can find a dupe to be the Adjutant. (lol) But let me re-emphasize that I do not want any one of you to "get on board" with my vision simply because the Camp is hard up for anyone willing to be the Commander. That would be unfair and unprofitable to me and to the Camp. RR

Gentlemen,

No one on the Reagan Camp executive committee that I know of wanted Rudy to resign and I know of three CEC members for certain who asked him not to resign, including myself. It is true that not all members in the Reagan Camp or on the CEC are on the exact same page as Rudy, but they DO agree with him on many issues. Not all who are in this email thread would have totally agreed with Rudy at some point in their past, including Rudy himself, until y'all were educated enough to become unreconstructed. Will everyone in the Reagan Camp eventually become unreconstructed over time? Probably not, but I feel some will given time. I respect and appreciate Rudy for all he does to fulfill the Charge and for doing what he felt was the right thing to do, but I still do not agree that him resigning as commander of our camp was the thing to do. Rudy has been a very good commander and would have been one for the rest of this year, even if not everyone on the Reagan CEC was on the exact same page with him. That of course is mine and the others opinion, but it was not Rudy's sentiment. No one in my opinion was ugly to another over any of this. As one of the past two commanders and in good standing with the camp, Rudy is still a member of our camp's executive committee and is highly appreciated by our camp.

**I gave the explanation of my resignation not to continue any conflict over it but to seek to explain to interested parties as much as I could what had taken place here in Palestine that caused me to resign; and I sought to tell enough but not to be too tedious with the details.**

**In view of \_\_\_\_\_'s response here I feel that I must give a little further light on the subject. See attached [below]. RR**

Gentlemen,

I gave the explanation of my resignation not to continue any conflict over it but to seek to explain to interested parties as much as I could what had taken place here in Palestine that caused me to resign; and I sought to tell enough but not to be too tedious with the details.

In view of \_\_\_\_\_'s response here I feel that I must give a little further light on the subject. I have been a member of the Reagan Camp for about six years or so. My belief in the Charge and my dedication to it has not changed in those years. I was first elected as 2<sup>nd</sup> Lt. Commander in the Camp about three-four years ago and was told at that time that I would never move to a higher rank because of my refusal to say the Bellamy Pledge. My reply was "fine" because I had no desire or designs to move any higher. I did think that such was not right but I knew what I was up against. I quit reciting that Pledge shortly after joining the SCV but I never created any kind of controversy over it (until this recent end of 2014 and beginning of 2015) and even then I did not create the controversy as such. Those who opposed my advancing in rank left the Camp over other issues and I became the 1<sup>st</sup> Lt. Commander a couple of years ago. In 2014 I was asked to run as Commander and was elected without opposition and was the Commander during 2014.

Though I have tried to use wisdom and NOT create unnecessary controversy in the Camp I have always been very outspoken in regard to my "passion" for the vindicating of the Cause. I have given several programs in the Camp which clearly and plainly let people know how passionate I am for the Cause and the fulfilling of the Charge. Up until last November I had never brought up the Pledge Issue in the Camp itself though everybody knew I did not recite it. In this past November I gave a program in the Reagan Camp on *Reconstruction and the SCV Today* and in this program and in the context of the program I set forth the belief and the reason for the belief that the Bellamy Pledge had no place in the SCV and that it was diametrically contrary to our Charge. I made no mandate but simply mentioned it in the context of the entire program. Nobody in the Camp in any way acted offended, etc. \_\_\_\_\_, who was and is the 1<sup>st</sup> Lt. C did ask me what I had in mind for the future and I told him I introduced the subject so that sometime in the next year we as a Camp could discuss the issue and possibly see it removed from the Camp and later during "this present controversy" I made it clear that I would only seek for that to happen if and when it was voted out by a "clear" majority.

Also in November and December the leaders of the Camp all met and twice I was told that they wanted me to be the Commander for 2015. On both occasions I gave them much encouragement to elect someone else. I did this because I was aware that not everybody in the Camp probably appreciated my "passion" for the Cause and the outspoken way that I expressed such. I was elected in December unanimously to be the Commander for 2015.

Then came the infamous Dispatch Article which was simply a call for a more militant SCV- all and every part of the SCV including the Reagan camp and members and including myself. This article did not mention the Pledge issue. \_\_\_\_\_ in this recent reply to my explanation letter stated the following-

“Gentlemen, No one on the Reagan Camp executive committee that I know of wanted Rudy to resign and I know of three CEC members for certain who asked him not to resign, including myself.”

This is certainly true but very misleading. I will explain shortly.

“It is true that not all members in the Reagan Camp or on the CEC are on the exact same page as Rudy, but they DO agree with him on many issues. Not all who are in this email thread would have totally agreed with Rudy at some point in their past, including Rudy himself, until y'all were educated enough to become unreconstructed. Will everyone in the Reagan Camp eventually become unreconstructed over time? Probably not, but I feel some will given time. I respect and appreciate Rudy for all he does to fulfill the Charge and for doing what he felt was the right thing to do, but I still do not agree that him resigning as commander of our camp was the thing to do. Rudy has been a very good commander and would have been one for the rest of this year, even if not everyone on the Reagan CEC was on the exact same page with him.”

\_\_\_\_\_ uses the words “exact same page” and “totally agreed” and such wording is very misleading. I made it abundantly clear that I was resigning NOT because not everyone was on the “exact same page” or in total agreement” with me but rather because the other leaders were not on the same “fundamental, basic page” with me and the “basic, fundamental vision” that I have for the SCV including the Reagan Camp.

Let me explain further- the article I wrote that at least three of the other leaders took **significant issue** with and that led to a rather acrimonious discussion was NOT over the Pledge Issue and was NOT over some specific action that I was calling for but rather was **much more basic and fundamental**. It was a call for a more militant SCV and I utterly explained what I meant by that- “a vigorous and aggressive support or promotion of a cause”. Even after such explanation, almost tedious explanation, my vision was decisively opposed by at least three of the leaders. In all of this I decided to lay my cards out on the table and this is where I stated clearly my view on the Pledge but I also stated that I would in no wise try to slam that view down anybody’s throat, etc. I set forth my vision and sent it to all the other leaders who were all involved in the controversy- 1<sup>st</sup> Lt. C, 2<sup>nd</sup> Lt. C, Adjutant, Chaplain, and Historian. I made it very clear that there could and would be minor differences among leaders but that it was unhealthy to have major differences- it does not work well to have leaders pulling against each other. So I stated that unless all of these men and I were on the same BASIC and FUNDAMENTAL page then it would be best to get another Commander who was on that same BASIC and FUNDAMENTAL page.

To my proposal the 2<sup>nd</sup> Lt Commander, the Historian, and the Chaplain all plainly declared that they do not share that same BASIC and FUNDAMENTAL vision. The Adjutant who had in the initial beginning of the controversy taken significant exception to my article did not reply to my proposal. The 1<sup>st</sup> Lt C throughout the controversy took a sort of middle of the road position. He misunderstood my article and expressed some strong disagreement with it and though he indicated to all his support for me as Commander he never came out clearly for the vision I set forth although I “thought” he was in BASIC agreement with that vision.

The way I saw it and see it and challenge anyone to show it to be different than this- these leaders did not want me to resign but they also did not want me to be the Commander! In other words they wanted me to be the Commander but to not lead the camp in the direction that I STRONGLY believed the camp should be led in. In the SCV, Commanders “command” nobody and nothing but they do lead. How can an SCV member be the “Commander” of SCV men and not “lead” them? How can a man be true to himself and lead not with his own vision but with somebody else’s vision. NO. I refuse to attempt such foolishness. The article, though never intended to on my part, was a line in the sand and five other Reagan camp leaders took their side on the line opposite of mine. All five of them, whatever their views, planted their selves clearly on the other side of the line. So be it.

Honestly, though I have written volumes on the subject and discussed it and probably will continue to do so, when it comes right down to it I am genuinely puzzled why so many good, SCV men; like these men are, get all up in arms when someone like myself comes along and calls for “militancy” in the SCV. AGAIN, by militancy I use that term strictly in a figurative sense. And I not only by militancy do not advocate any physical arms or fighting but I also do not mean or advocate any outlandish actions or demonstrations- unless someone would consider an aggressive and vigorous vindicating of the Cause being outlandish. Of course I do advocate “Flagging” as done by the Virginia Flaggers and perhaps that is the very thing that is behind some of this as I have been outspoken in my support of that kind of flagging.

So, I did not resign because everyone was “not on the exact same page” or did not “totally agree with me but rather because myself and the other leaders have radically different visions for the SCV. It is interesting though not surprising that from these five men only one of them attempted to address my vision in any detail at all.

As for \_\_\_\_’s statement about men becoming more unreconstructed by education I basically agree and I was proceeding to try to lead in that very manner- slowly and patiently and I did not orchestrate this present controversy but it happened and men took their sides. Again so be it.

The Reagan Camp has done many outstanding things for the fulfilling of the Charge and I am sure that they will continue to do so and I have and will commend them for whatever they do for the Cause. But the Reagan Camp is fairly typical of the SCV as a whole and if the SCV does not wake up and become more “militant” and quit being so damned “measured” in their devotion to the Cause and does not quit worrying about PR with this PC generation and does not address the “divided loyalties” in our midst and does not quit opposing the more “militant” members than the SCV will in a short time dwindle away to being a very insignificant force for the Cause if it even survives at all.

RR

# My Reply to Replies to Resignation Letter

First, I apologize for writing more on this “Resignation” issue. I will try to be as brief as possible. I do feel that I need to reply to several replies I have received. I appreciate very much the supportive responses I have received from several SCV brothers. In this brief letter I will attempt to “answer” some of the good comments that have been made concerning my resignation as Commander of the Reagan Camp and the issues involved.

First, I was also saddened by my resignation. I counted it as an honor to be the Commander of the Reagan Camp. But with that said I did what I thought best for the Reagan Camp and more importantly for the fulfilling of the Charge with its vindicating of the Cause. More on this later.

As for a new camp here in East Texas, I would love to see not only a new “Unreconstructed”, “Vindicators” camp here in the Palestine area but in many places. And I do believe that this is what needs to happen, is happening, and will happen in the days ahead. And yes Manse Jolly would be a great name for a Camp but would be my 2<sup>nd</sup> choice as my first choice would be the “Major Robert Lewis Dabney Irreconcilables Camp” with our slogan being the slogan that was attached to him after the War- “Unconquered, Unconquerable, and Forever Alienated”. I would love to see such a camp here and such camps all over and suggest we do like the Weatherford boys (Major Innes Randolph) did and pick the Unreconstructed men to name our Camps after. I can suggest several besides Randolph, Jolly, and Dabney. I got dubs on Dabney!

Here is the problem I faced here and I believe what I faced here is somewhat common everywhere. And let me say that I respect and appreciate what Paul and what Ray had to say and probably I am somewhere between these two good men. Here was the problem I faced and I believe that we “radicals” face:

The men of the Reagan camp who shared the leadership of the Camp with me and who opposed my vision of Reforming/Reconstructing the SCV are good men and good SCV members. They are NOT scalawags or traitors or “closet Confederates”. These are men who have proudly flown our Battle Flag with me in parades, dedications, memorials, etc. These are men who along with myself spent much money and labor building a top notch Confederate Veterans Memorial Plaza with Five CSA Flags flying from it year around. And yet these same men opposed and opposed rather strongly my call for a more militant SCV (with a clear and plain explanation of what I meant by militant) and for the removal of the Federal Flag and its Pledge from the SCV. These are the same men who opposed a proposition for us to “Flag” Palestine if and when they refused us the right to be in a local parade, etc. These are the men who decisively opposed my “vindicating of the Cause” vision for the SCV.

These men are “moderates”. Most of us are “radicals”. There are indeed scalawags, traitors, cowards, and even corrupt men among us in the SCV, not many but more than we would like to think. Scalawags etc, including those who abuse their power (Current Tx Division Command), need to be opposed and “warred” against- given the Black Flag. They are enemies to the Cause- perhaps worse enemies than the yankee Progressives. To me that is an easy decision to oppose such men once they decisively prove that they are such men. But what to do with the moderates is a much more difficult question and a much more vital question as I think it is evident that the majority of SCV men are “moderates”.

I refuse to declare war on these good moderate men who have done and do much good for the Cause and our Heritage. With that said I truly believe that the moderates are the bane of the SCV. The

SCV can and will survive the few scalawags and cowards and corrupt men in our midst but the “moderates” are what will eventually slowly suck the life out of the SCV. The reason for this is that those who oppose us, the Yankee Progressives, are not moderates- they are radicals. And radicals can never be defeated by moderates. Only radicals from the other side of an issue can defeat radicals who oppose them. Our enemies, who are numerous and powerful have declared total war against us and what we stand for, they have given us the Black Flag and can only be answered back with the Black Flag. That does not mean that we stoop to their standards or tactics. We operate according to our high standards but we do so with an all out, “radical” measure, not a compromised, tone it down measure. Stonewall Jackson advocated the Black Flag of total war but he certainly did not mean doing what Sherman did but he did mean taking the FIGHT to the Yankees and doing this so “radically” as to bring our invading enemies to their knees. Lee too, to some degree, wanted to take the FIGHT to the North and did so to some extent but he and Jackson’s “vigorous and aggressive”/ “militant” approach was often opposed by the politicians and diplomats who were too concerned with PR. Our enemies are fighting us with all out efforts and assaults and we must FIGHT back with the same. These good men from the Reagan Camp choked and swallowed their tongue over my call to FIGHT such a fight. That is a humongous problem.

The moderates are a huge problem. It is moderates who have allowed the Yankees and scalawags to steal the MOC. It is the moderates who have lost us so much ground in the last fifty years. The moderates think and act as if the “truce” that Dr. Clyde Wilson talks about was still holding when the truth is our enemies broke that truce fifty years ago and in fact they really never had any intention of keeping that truce and we were duped into “signing on” to that truce in the first place.

In 1860 and early 1861 men like Davis, Lee, Early, Dabney, Reagan and many others were “moderates” as they labored to “get along” with those from the North. They dickered and dealt with the Yankees seeking to reach agreeable compromises so that there could be continued union. For some of these men Lincoln’s Election was the end of their “moderation” and led them to the “radical” action of Secession. For many others, the Virginia men, even after Lincoln’s election, were still “moderates” and opposed the “radical” action of Secession; it took Lincoln’s call for volunteers to invade and subjugate the Seceding Southern States, in essence his declaration of war on the South to turn these Virginia “moderates” into “radicals”. To be a “moderate” in 1860 was one thing but to be one by the end of April, 1861 was quite another thing.

To be a “moderate” SCV member in 1955 was one thing but to be such a moderate in 2015 is quite another thing.

The “moderates” among us are a big, big problem and a difficult one to deal with. Do we fight them like we do the Yankees and scalawags? I cannot. But do we simply accept them and sit around and sing kumbaya with them and ignore their “compromises” with our enemies such as reciting that damnable Lincolnian Pledge? I cannot do that either. I will rejoice in whatever good they do but I will point out to them and others and at times even “militate” against their “compromises” and “dallying” with our enemies. I have and will speak very plainly to how that Pledge is an absolute contradiction and denial of our Charge- any damn way that you could possibly interpret that Charge!!!

Again the moderates are the bane of the SCV. The “moderates” complain that if the SCV becomes “radical” we will run off members and at the same time they piss and moan about our lack of members! They make numbers a big issue, THE BIG issue. (I don’t think we should do that. I think we should make the Charge and the vindicating of the Cause THE BIG issue.) But for discussion

sake let's say that the moderates are right and numbers are indeed as big of an issue as they make it. Well, whatever we are doing which is mainly led by moderates is not working very well. We recruit a few and we lose more than we recruit. The SCV does not and never will make men into "vindicators of the Cause". The SCV as it vindicates the Cause will attract others who believe in that Cause and they will join us and those who do not really believe in our Cause we should not want anyway! I say that there are numerous men who are leaving the SCV because of the "moderates'" compromises! And these who the moderates are running off are not just "numbers" or "names on a roll who nobody ever sees or often even know who the hell they are but rather are men who believe in the Cause and believe in it very strongly! Damn it! I was a Confederate, a believer in the Cause long before I ever heard of much less joined the SCV! And so were many of you!

So again how do we "radicals" deal with our "moderate" brethren. Well, we cannot compromise with them over the Charge and the vindicating of the Cause. I will compromise till the cows come home over whether we are going to meet at a Mexican Restaurant or a Chinese or any other kind. Those kind of personal preferences call for compromise in an organization. But we cannot compromise that which has created and constitutes the organization itself!! The Lincolnian Pledge is clearly and plainly a compromise of our Charge- any way you want to interpret the Charge unless you gut its meaning and make it read any old way you want to. I can also make a strong case that the Federal Flag in the prominent place in the SCV is also a contradiction of the Charge.

So again what do we do with the moderates? I think we carry on with vindicating the Cause and if they will join us fine and if they will not join us we leave them alone. We let them do what they do and we do what we do. In our vindicating of the Cause we will undoubtedly expose and rebuke their compromises- so be it. Yet we at the same time will be glad at the good they do for the Cause though grieved with their "moderations". In my appeal for a more militant SCV I basically said for the moderates, if they would not FIGHT alongside us, to at least get out of our way. I think that has to be our attitude. Sometimes that will lead us to staying in a camp and fighting the fight and other times it will lead us to "resigning" and leaving the moderates to their compromises.

In the Reagan Camp I believed that it would be better for the Cause to resign as not one man stood with me as I set forth my vision. If one man had took a clear and plain stand with me than it may have led to a different action on my part. I really believe that practically speaking we are now going to have more and more of two different kinds of SCV men and Camps- "moderates" and "radicals". So be it. Hopefully the SCV, as we radicals radically fulfill the Charge and FIGHT the enemies of that Cause/Our Heritage, will become more and more "radicalized"/Unreconstructed.

I really do sympathize with \_\_\_\_\_'s views and agree with them somewhat but at the same time I think the wisest course is to do our thing and let the moderates do their thing. Will this resolve all the issues? No. Will we have clashes? Undoubtedly we will. As \_\_\_\_\_ has clearly pointed out, every time we attend a Brigade or Division function we are faced with the "moderates'" compromises.

So what do we do? First, we attempt to reform our camps as I was doing with the Reagan Camp. A line was drawn and I was the only member standing on the "radical" side of the line. So I resigned. If we cannot reform a camp then we should join a reformed camp and/or seek to start a new Unreconstructed Camp/Radical Camp. Next, we must seek to elect men into Brigade and Division positions who are "radicals". And in doing all of this may God grant us to be "as bold as a lion and as wise as a serpent". And to be as respectful as we can possibly be with our moderate brethren while at the same time dealing at times ruthlessly with their compromises of the Charge!

My good friend and fellow “radical” \_\_\_\_\_ advocates patient education. I also advocate this approach and indeed that is exactly what I was doing in the Reagan Camp. But there comes times when lines must be drawn (My article calling for a more militant SCV and the Reagan moderates reaction to it drew the line in the Reagan Camp though I did not really intend on it doing so) and when those times come we best be willing to either draw the line and/or take our side on the side of the Charge and the vindication of the Cause. In 1860-61 for some Southerners Lincoln’s Election drew the line and ‘moderates” like John H Reagan and Jefferson Davis took the South’s side of the line. For other’s it was Lincoln’s Declaration of war that drew the line. Well, I suppose that type of thing is and will be the case in the SCV today though I really wonder what it will take for some men to have the line drawn. I fear that many if not most of these moderates will never take a stand no matter how much we educate them. The Reagan men have been educated quite a bit yet have clearly taken their stand on the moderate side of the line. Education is for the most part successful with men who already have the Cause in their heart but simply lack the understanding they should have and need to vindicate it. It rarely changes a man’s basic thinking about things. And let’s face it, there are many ulterior motives behind many of the moderate’s compromises- business interests, fear of losing one’s job or position or social standing, etc, etc. Education will do those ruled by ulterior motives little to no good.

Also in regard to the issue of education- We educate men not only with our direct teaching but also with our practices. And Flags and how we relate to them are powerful tools of education- one way or another. I think it is downright humorous how we in many of our SCV Camps and functions recite within a matter of minutes if not seconds of each other a Pledge and a Charge that diametrically oppose one another. What a joke. AND we proudly carry a Flag and salute it with “affection and reverence and undying devotion to the Cause for which it stands” and at the same time give the prominent place to a Flag that stood and still stands (This Yankee Nation has never repented of their illegal and immoral war against the South) for a nation/empire that opposed and waged an all out war against that Flag we reverence and its Cause! Again, what a joke! A sad and tragic joke!

By the way, as \_\_\_\_\_ aptly brought out, the SCV needs to get rid of that damnable salute of surrender and subjugation when saluting our Battle Flag! Another of the moderate’s compromises!

As to the actions of Reforming our Camps and Starting New Reformed Camps and electing Brigade and Division Officers-

We did not get into this “moderate” mess overnight and we will not get out of it overnight. We must roll up our sleeves and go to work. Again I commend the Weatherford men and the Lubbock men and the Belo Men and the RE Lee men and the Amarillo men who have either reformed their camps or started new ones. This is what we need to do. It will be even tougher to reform our Brigades and Divisions but it can be done.

I fear that we have a tremendous uphill battle in this regard but we must do what we can. two. The current corrupt Division Command will run some of their corrupt men and the other uncorrupt moderates may run some of their own moderates and we need to run some radicals. We will be tempted to run or support uncorrupt moderates with the idea that only such could win an election but this would be a mistake, the same mistake the so-called conservative republicans make year after year. Moderates are the problem, a much bigger problem than simply the corrupt ones; they are not the solution.

Yours For the Vindication of the Cause,

Rudy Ray, proud son of a Confederate Veteran

# Lubbock Camp Commander Joey Hernandez responds to the Mike Moore

**Everyone knows that a lawyer will lie to further his case.**

Mr. Moore in his latest outrage left out a very important detail as to why I agreed to a new vote and later backed out. After the conclusion of the DEC meeting last March, I was met at the back of the room by Holley, McMahan, Walker, Moore and thankfully, Sam Cornelius, was present to verify the conversation. McMahan and Walker, upon their bond, told me the Lubbock Camp was without a Charter or a Constitution, Holly and Moore took them at their word while I argued the point. To break the stalemate, I agreed to hold a new election on the basis that a new charter would have to be filed. Without a doubt I would have honored this deal if it were true that the camp was without a charter.

The following Monday a call to National would prove that once again I was lied to; the Lubbock Camp indeed had a valid Charter and Constitution. That very day an EC meeting was held, Walker as the Adjutant was asked to attend but declined, the Officers of the Camp concluded there was no need for another election. The authority to make this decision was obtained by the following:

From the Lubbock Constitution

The Executive Council, by the power of the Constitution (Article VI Section 1 Part C '*Rule on all questions affecting the election, eligibility, and conduct of members.*'

From the National SCV Constitution,

All Camps shall have the full enjoyment of the right to govern themselves, provided that they shall be subject to this Constitution and the Standing Orders of the Confederation. Each Camp shall be the judge of its own members, subject to the provisions of this Constitution and Standing Orders.

From the Texas SCV Constitution,

All Camps shall have the full enjoyment of the Right to Govern Themselves.

I let Mr. Holley know the decision of the Camp EC. Perhaps that is why he sent McMahan and Moore down to disrupt our meeting.

**Now the Truth about the So Called "Illegal Election" of February 2014.**

The meeting during the previous month blew up by Mr. Walker in saying, 'There Would be No Vote about the Flag in MY CAMP'! I cooled the tempers and brought up the suggestion that we

evaluate the Camp Constitution and offer amendments that we could all agree with; I was then named the chair for the amendment committee.

Upon reading our constitution, I had found that it had not been amended since its adoption in 1978. I read the National and Texas Constitutions to find those items that would strengthen our Camp Constitution.

During this process it came to my attention that Mr. Walker failed in his duty to hold an election the previous December.

### **Article VII Elections Section 1**

...Officers shall be elected annually during the month of December to a twelve-month term.....

During the February meeting, the new amendments were voted on and passed by the camp, I brought up the fact that two months prior we missed our election cycle. I did at NO TIME call for an election, for as the Chair of the meeting I was not allowed to make a motion. After a short debate, Mr. Timmons made a motion to not waste any more time and hold an election that very evening. I must, at this time, mention that Mr. Timmons voted for Mr. Walker to remain as the Commander of the Camp. So neither I, nor those that support me, 'Forced the Overthrow of the Camp'. The motion was seconded and voted on, only Mr. Walker voted against the motion. As the result I was named the new commander and Mr. Walker, who participated in every aspect of the election, agreed to serve as the Camp Adjutant. That should have been the end of it.

Now the last is a question that only Mr. Holley could answer. How did I violate the National and Texas Constitutions? As stated above, I have read both constitutions and have yet to find where I have violated either and Mr. Holley has never told me what part of what section he is referring to.

I have tried to keep this response as short and to the point as I could. As always I will answer any and all questions about the above meetings, all one has to do is ask.

Commander Joseph L Hernandez  
Col. Thomas S. Lubbock Camp #1352

**In trying to make sense of the rationale of those with the mind set of those we call "stripers" it has become clear that they cannot comprehend S. D. Lee's Charge, or fail to do so. The first 11 words after the address to us, the focal point of his Charge . . . "we commit THE VINDICATION OF THE CAUSE FOR WHICH WE FOUGHT". How do WE instill, engrave, and/or, burn those words, and meaning of those words "For Which WE Fought" onto the heart and minds of those NEW members that look to us as mentors and teachers, and at the same time re-educate, or remind the "stripers" it is NOT about their service to their country, it is about their Ancestors service to THEIR Country . . . The Confederate States of America that should be Defended, Perpetuated, Venerated, Justified, and Honored by We the living, WE, the Un-Reconstructed members of the Sons of Confederate Veterans that UNDERSTAND the meaning of S. D. Lee's Charge.**

**Jim McNabb**

I Salute the Confederate Flag...

**Let us do it RIGHT:**

Dear Rudy,

Your email reminded me of the story that I have repeated at talks at many SCV camps of how the organization eliminated the hand-over-the-heart act in pledging the Confederate flag. According to the story told by Buddy Patterson, who was the former Historian for the SCV, Texas Division, it was **Ralph Green who, during his tenure as C-in-C of the SCV, changed the hand-over-the-heart salute and replaced it with the open palm gesture.**

Long before I knew this information, I always thought it unusual for the SCV to do the open palm salute when the United Daughters of the Confederacy have no problem keeping their salute to the Confederate flag with their hands over their heart.

**If we hold dear the charge**, perhaps those connected with a new SCV camp could bring a motion before the Texas Division, or at the national reunion, to **restore the hand-over-the-heart pledge.**

This offered most respectfully,

Scott Bowden  
[www.leeatwar.com](http://www.leeatwar.com)

Note: all emphasis by the editor

Ralph Green, former CIC, was one of the privileged Grannies, who fought bitterly against the efforts of Jim Dark and Denne Sweeney, to save our beloved fraternal organization from the rule of an elite, entrenched minority and return the SCV to our membership. **Green felt very strongly that the Confederate flag did NOT deserve the same veneration as the FEDERAL flag,** thus his removal of the hand over the heart to be replaced with the **submissive palms up “salute”.**

**LET US RETURN TO PROPER VENERATION OF OUR CONFEDERATE FLAGS WITH OUR HANDS OVER OUR HEARTS!**



# Does this apply to the SCV - TX DIV - DEC - Local Camps ?

## The key word seems to be the Constitution.

### What Does the Bible Say about Executive Power?

By Paul Dowling / 15 January 2015

*"The two enemies of the people are criminals and government, so let us tie the second down with the chains of the Constitution so the second will not become the legalized version of the first." — Thomas Jefferson*

*Isaiah 33:22 & the Affirmation of Three Forms of Governance*

**For the Lord is our judge, the Lord is our lawgiver, the Lord is our king; it is he who will save us. —Isaiah 33:22**

The Separation of Powers in the US Constitution

The Founders of our republic knew the *Bible* intimately. They read *Isaiah* and, thus, knew that three forms of governance were necessary. Trusting only God to be able to do all three, they wisely did not put their trust in human beings to do the same. They, therefore, chose to create a system of checks and balances, wherein a broad consensus would be needed, across townships, states, and the nation, before any functional decisions could be made that would have an impact on the people.

The office of president—the chief executive—was created on the model of the Israelite king, who was not above the law. This is why the President of the United States is not regal, but common in how he is treated legally.

*Deuteronomy 17:14-20 on the Election & Duties of Kings*

**14 When you are come unto the land which the Lord your God is giving you, and shall possess it, and shall dwell therein, and shall say, I will set a king over me, like as all the nations that are about me; 15 you shall surely set a king, whom the Lord your God shall choose, one from among your countrymen you shall set as king over yourselves; you may not set a stranger over yourselves, which is not your countryman.<sup>1</sup> 16 Moreover, he shall not multiply horses for himself, nor shall he cause the people to return to Egypt to multiply horses, since the Lord has said to you, You shall never again return that way. 17 Neither shall he multiply wives to himself, that his heart turn not away; neither shall he greatly multiply to himself silver and gold.<sup>2</sup> 18 And it shall be, when he sits upon the throne of his kingdom, that he shall write himself a copy of this law in a book out of that which is before the priests the Levites; 19 and it shall be with him, and he shall read therein all the days of his life, that he may learn to fear the Lord his God, to keep all the words of this law and these statutes, to do them, 20 that his heart be not lifted up above his countrymen<sup>3</sup>, and**

**that he turn not aside from the commandment, to the right hand, or to the left<sup>4</sup>, to the end that he may prolong his days in his kingdom, he, and his children, in the midst of Israel.<sup>5</sup> — *Deuteronomy 17:14-20***

### Elaborations

<sup>1</sup>A person who is elected king—or chief executive—must be born a citizen of that country which has chosen him to lead. This is to ensure that the person shares and values the culture of those who are entrusting the office to him. This is why the President of the United States must be a natural born citizen, in order to stand election.

<sup>2</sup>High office, once attained, is for doing the people's business, not for getting the people to do yours. The president's focus is to be on matters of state that are to the benefit of everyone among the people, and not solely his own. He is the servant of the people; they are not his. He is there to safeguard their freedom, not to be enriched at their expense.

<sup>3</sup>The chief executive is not above the law, nor does he enjoy any special legal privilege or protection. He must know the law intimately and abide by it faithfully, for he is no better than his fellows when it comes to legal matters. What is wrong for the people to do is also wrong for the executive. The president must know the Constitution and take an oath to uphold what is written in it.

<sup>4</sup>The chief executive must follow every single law to the letter, in order to lead by example. He also must enforce the law, whether he likes the law or not, for as long as it is the law of the land.

<sup>5</sup>The chief executive must maintain the state in the same condition in which he found it upon taking office, so that all who come after him will have the same chances at health, wealth, and happiness that he was blessed with. The president must leave the country in as good a shape as he found it in, more or less.

### Laying a Wise Foundation

It is more than a little remarkable just how closely the Founders read and studied the *Bible*. Finding themselves in their own Land of Milk and Honey, and valuing religious freedom to the extent they did, perhaps it should come as no surprise that those who grew up in colonial America noticed some relevant parallels between themselves and the Israelites of biblical times. And modern-day America is all the better for its foundation having been firmly laid upon the time-tested wisdom of the *Bible*.

---

**Paul Dowling, EdD, grew up in Baytown, Texas, where he learned to value family, friends, and freedom. He earned a BA in Linguistics and an MA in German from the University of Texas at Austin, and then went on to an MA in English and an EdD in Curriculum & Instruction at the University of Houston. A public school teacher for 10 years in Texas and 15 years in California, Paul currently lives in the San Fernando Valley, where he is a job developer who helps special education students procure their first job experiences. Paul is a sponsor of a Constitution Club at his high school. Paul enjoys making political speeches and writing articles for his blog [ConservativeNotions.com](http://ConservativeNotions.com). He can be contacted [atpaulddowling@aol.com](mailto:atpaulddowling@aol.com).**

# Commander, Where was OUR flag??

Dear Commander Holley:

Many of us took notice that you brought your own hand-picked color guard to lead the SCV delegation at the Ft. Worth Live Stock Show parade. You had three men on horseback with TWO FLAGS leading the way. One held the FEDERAL flag of the United States of America and the other the flag of TEXAS. The third man carried NO FLAG at all.



Where was the Flag of the Confederates and why was your color guard not carrying OUR FLAG?

We are the Sons of CONFEDERATE Veterans and you were elected to LEAD us and carry out the CHARGE. We salute the CONFEDERATE FLAG and THE CAUSE FOR WHICH IT (the flag) STANDS!

**Why did you have your color guard of the Sons of CONFEDERATE Veterans FAIL to carry OUR flag? All of the units behind your carriage entourage LED THEIR UNITS with OUR flag.**

**Did you not have a CONFEDERATE Flag with you? Im certain you could have borrowed one of the MANY CONFEDERATE Flags that our men were carrying. You could have selected from many fine CONFEDERATE Flags to give your “extra man” to PROUDLY carry alongside your beloved federal flag and our Texas Flag (which our Confederate fathers fought under).**

**Did you decide that OUR CONFEDERATE Flags are not worthy to be flown next to the FEDERAL flag? Are they to be relegated to the REAR of your carriage as second rate banners? Are they not to be given the place of honor of other flags?**

**How confusing it must have been to the public to see no CONFEDERATE flag leading a CONFEDERATE parade. One wonder’s what a spectator might think seeing a Federal flag leading the Sons of CONFEDERATE Veterans with NO CONFEDERATE Flags alongside. Perhaps they thought the CONFEDERATE part of the parade began BEHIND you. Or perhaps they thought you were representing the Veterans of Foreign Wars, the American Legion or even the Sons of UNION Veterans. Or perhaps you were the Principal of the Oak Cliff High School Marching Band that preceded you. Carrying a U.S. Flag in front of Confederates is confusing and misrepresents our organization.**

**You have disrespected the position of the Texas Division Commander, The members of the Texas Division and the Sons of Confederate Veterans organization. Worse, you have dishonored the men we took a CHARGE to defend.**

**Like the SSCV, you have failed to grasp the importance of the FLAG and what it stands for. Michael Hill wrote about men like you, who fail to grasp the meaning of the CHARGE and the FLAGS our fathers fought and died to defend. Following is that exerted article for the benefit of our readers to help them understand the mindset of your elitist command:**

## **THE SOCIETY OF TRUE HIGHLANDERS MEETS THE SSCV**

**by Dr. Michael Hill**

**Once upon a time in Scotland there existed an organization called the Society of True Highlanders (SOTH). It was formed in 1815 by Alastair Ranaldson of Glengarry scarcely two generations after the heroic, but tragic, battle of Culloden (1746). The Society allowed those descendants of once-proud Jacobite Highlanders, a generation of men willing to fight for the preservation of their culture and civilization, a means of saving face. The Society's members ostentatiously imitated the warrior class to which their grandfathers had genuinely belonged. Their raison d'être was to celebrate the history, language, dress, music, and martial character "of our illustrious race in the Highlands and Isles of Scotland." In order to belong to the SOTH, a man had to prove descent from a real Highland chief; thus it was an exclusive, genealogical-based organization, a sort of club for men who had no heart for a real fight. The Highland gentleman and his lady, now thoroughly anglicized, were happy to play-act the part of their noble ancestors.**

**But unlike the Jacobite warriors of a century earlier, the members of the SOTH were no threat to the established imperial order of the day. In fact, the men of the SOTH were quick to pledge allegiance to an alien banner (the Union Jack) and the imperial designs it represented. They conveniently forgot the red-coated troops who had invaded their homeland within living memory, and by giving their allegiance to the empire they also, by implication, gave approval to the depredations committed against Scotland.**

**Under Glengarry's direction, the Society flourished for some years. The members, inspired by Sir Walter Scott's Waverley novels, spent festive nights**

with their ladies at Fort William drinking toasts and boasting of their forebears' deeds against the hated Sassanach (Gaelic for "Saxons"). But while the men of the SOTH played at warrior, the Scottish people were being deprived of their birthright by a British Empire all too eager to emasculate Scottish culture while at the same time employing tens of thousands of Alba's sons to fight and die for London's imperial aspirations.

Just in case the reader missed the parallels, there are lessons for Southerners in this illustration. At present, there is a faction within the Sons of Confederate Veterans (SCV) calling itself "Save the SCV" (SSCV) that seemingly wishes to emulate the Society of True Highlanders. They make a show of honoring their Confederate ancestors, but when it comes to breathing life once again into the principles that motivated Lee and Jackson (as well as Washington and Jefferson) to stand against the encroachment of centralized tyranny, they hide behind the dubious assertion that the SCV ought to be nothing more than a club of amateur historians and gravestone polishers. While claiming honorable intentions in regard to their forebears, the men of the SSCV are unwilling to admit that the principles for which they struggled—States rights and secession, in particular—were right. How can a man claim to honor his Confederate ancestors and at the same time deny the very things for which they fought and died? The disgruntled SSCVers can blather on until they are Yankee-blue in the face, but their words ring hollow. To equate the righteous principles of the Confederacy with treason, revolution, and radicalism, and to pledge allegiance to the usurper's flag that denied the right of self-government to the Southern people is to spit on the graves of noble men and a noble cause.

Simply stated, those who support the SSCV platform and are unwilling to commit themselves to the sound principles so staunchly defended by our Southern forebears do not deserve to be called by the name of "Confederates." If they were honest with themselves they would furl the battleflag, forbid the playing of "Dixie," and forget the heroic sacrifices of the men in grey. Once these things are cast aside, then they can content themselves with reciting the mantra "one nation indivisible" while saluting the flag of their conquerors and the destroyers of American constitutional liberty.

It is time for the truly bold men in the SCV to join hands ..... so we can more effectively fight the battles that lie before us for the preservation and advancement of our culture and our liberties. Our brave ancestors would expect nothing less of us. Let us, then, not follow the SSCV into shameful oblivion. Rather, let us help the SCV avoid the sorry fate of the Society of True Highlanders.

**This is why we need to replace the current leadership with NEW MEN who take the CHARGE seriously and respect local camp autonomy. Who don't waste time and resources on Vendettas, rather who will take the fight to the true enemies of our heritage and will UNITE rather than divide our Division.**

Word on the street is that VENDETTA SQUAD members **Gary Bray and David McMahon** intend to run AGAIN for Division offices. **Do we really want to continue with corrupt "leadership"?** Let support good men who are concerned with UNITING the division they have worked so hard to DIVIDE by attacking Honourable men. Its time for **NEW LEADERS** who are interested in **defending the CHARGE** and upholding the GOOD NAMES of our Confederate fathers.



# THAT FLAG!!!

BY Rudy Ray

We need to understand in this Washington and Lee attack, our enemies understand something that many of our friends do not. THE Flag is what our enemies hate! And they do so because they understand the significance of a Flag and in particular THAT Flag.

The Battle Flag represents, like nothing else does, the Cause for which our Father's fought. And make no mistake about it, our enemies hate our Flag NOT because they misunderstand it but because they damn well do understand what it stands for.

In a nutshell it stands for a Constitutional, Federal form of Government which protects ORDERED liberty and ORDERED freedom and ORDERED rights; ORDERED by God and His Word and thus it stands against yankee, jacobin, socialist, egalitarianism and if anyone wants to know what all that is just look around at our society today and especially look at Washington, DC and there you have it and thus all that our Flag stands for is a threat to the jacobin yankee leaders that occupy the White House and both Houses of Congress! And unfortunately have and do occupy nearly every one of our Colleges and Universities- hotbeds of Political Correctness.

So I say lets give them more and more of what they hate so much! Forward the Colors!!!!!!



# THOUGHT/HATE Crime by evil VMI cadets:

from [SOUTHERN LEGAL RESOURCE CENTER, INC.](#)

16 JAN 2015

VMI Commandant office manager

Dear Ms. Leech

Today while honoring VMI's greatest military man on this holiday weekend, I was deeply offended by the actions of Col. Levenson [LevensonGM@vmi.edu](mailto:LevensonGM@vmi.edu) huffing out to Stonewall Jackson's statue and screaming like an idiot for three cadets to get away from "that thing" and "those people".

He was referring to the Confederate Battle flag under which General Jackson defended his home state of Virginia.

The three cadets were obviously taught honor and courage by someone other than this man. I find it disgraceful that anyone from this storied institution would act in a manner such as his.

The proud sons and daughters of of Virginia will never forget Lee and Jackson.

I would encourage all the cadets to join us next year in our annual march through the streets of Lexington and across the parade grounds to pay tribute to two of Virginia's finest men.

Sincerely,  
Grayson Jennings  
Mechanicsville, Va.



[TRAITOR TO VIRGINIA](#)

Wednesday, January 21, 2015

## Va Flaggers: Lexington Report -- Flagging Friday

Greetings Patriots! We have much to share about the incredible turnout, events, and experiences during the Lee-Jackson Holiday weekend in Lexington, Virginia. This will be the first of several reports, in an attempt to inform, inspire, and properly thank all of those who had a part in making it the biggest and best ever!

### FLAGGING FRIDAY:

Ever since the City Council voted to ban ALL flags from city light pole flag stands (except the US flag, Va State Flag and non-existent Lexington City Flag), the Va Flaggers have taken to the streets of Lexington on the State Lee-Jackson Day Holiday, which is the Friday closest to Robert E. Lee's birthday. This Friday, BY FAR, was our best ever, with more folks attending, and more opportunities to educate and change the hearts and minds of those willing to listen, and stand up to those who refuse to hear or accept the truth regarding Lee and Jackson, their flags, and the men who fought and died beneath them.



We started the day with 54 folks meeting at Jackson Cemetery for instructions, information, and an invocation, asking God's protection and blessing on our endeavors. Armed with flyers, flags, and the determination of our ancestors, we took to the sidewalks of Lexington, spreading out and taking positions at city light poles from the Stonewall Jackson Cemetery stretching down Main Street and over to Washington & Lee University. It was a beautiful sight to behold, looking down from Main at the flags of our forefathers lining the streets of the city once considered "The Shrine of the South". The weather, ominous just the day before, was almost perfect. Temperatures reached the upper 40's, with sunshine and a gentle breeze to lift our flags throughout the day.



At 1:00 pm, we gathered just a few blocks from the city center on Route 60 to raise the first Lexington Memorial Battle Flag, as reported earlier. Our numbers continued to grow, as over 60 folks attended the dedication, and then headed back to Lexington to resume flagging.



By the time we left the Lexington sidewalks at dusk, over 80 people had joined us, many flagging for the first time, and all reporting very positive exchanges and experiences with citizens, tourists, and students throughout the day. We printed 350 flyers and were completely out of "ammo" (the term coined by our own Sgt. Troutman for our literature) before the day was over!



Exhausted, but galvanized by the incredible turnout and success of a very long day, we met at Country Cookin' (by invitation of the good folks there!) and counted over 100 in attendance, double what we had reserved, as more folks came in that evening. After a great meal and last minute instructions for Saturday, we retired for the evening with great anticipation, realizing that the influx of folks who could not take off work to be with us Friday would mean

even more flags and Flaggers on Saturday.

Great press coverage and more photos here: [http://www.thenews-gazette.com/index.php?option=com\\_content&view=article&id=1925%3Aflagging-the-holiday&catid=77%3Abreaking-news&Itemid=395](http://www.thenews-gazette.com/index.php?option=com_content&view=article&id=1925%3Aflagging-the-holiday&catid=77%3Abreaking-news&Itemid=395)

Excellent commentary here... <http://www.southern-thangs.blogspot.com/2015/01/a-really-big-confederate-flag-in.html?m=1>

...and here: [http://www.parispi.net/opinion/columns/article\\_fac881ea-9ffe-11e4-8dd3-ffd6a2fa21c6.html](http://www.parispi.net/opinion/columns/article_fac881ea-9ffe-11e4-8dd3-ffd6a2fa21c6.html)

Stay tuned...much more to come...

VaFlaggers



**Thursday, January 22, 2015**

## Va Flaggers Lee-Jackson Weekend Report Part II -- Washington & Lee University

Saturday morning, we gathered at Stonewall Jackson cemetery for a memorial service for General Jackson. Once again, God smiled on the Confederates gathered to honor Lee & Jackson with beautiful weather—sunny, breezy, and temperatures near 50 degrees! A large crowd was on hand for the service, and those in attendance paid respects to the General through prayer, singing hymns, and laying memorial wreaths.





Immediately following the service, we formed up for a parade through Lexington. Our unit was led by Generals Lee and Jackson, a Flagger color guard, and followed by the largest group of flaggers we have ever had attend the event including SCV, UDC, OCR and Mechanized Cavalry members from across the Commonwealth and the country! It seemed to us that there were about twice as many folks gathered to watch the parade as there had been last year as well. It was truly a glorious site, to see the parade stretched down main street, and the street filled with flags and supporters of Confederate heritage. Along the route, we sang Dixie, handed out stick flags, and received the support and well wishes of all who had gathered.



At the end of the route, the parade took a detour from its normal path. Instead of heading to Washington and Lee University, we were directed the opposite way, and into the municipal parking deck. At this point, we turned and our entire unit headed over to Letcher Ave., to make our way to VMI to pay our respects to General Jackson before the Memorial Service, as has been our custom for the past several years.

As most of you know, a group of 6 students who attend Washington and LEE university's school of law wrote a letter in April of 2014 to Washington & LEE officials (copy attached) which demanded that the university hold itself responsible for the racist and dishonorable conduct of Robert E. Lee. Specifically, these agitators demanded the following mandates be implemented, threatening civil disobedience if the administration failed to comply tot their demands:

- 1) We demand that the University fully recognize Martin Luther King, Jr. Day on the undergraduate campus.
- 2) We demand the University stop allowing Neo-Confederates (i.e. SCV, UDC, re-enactors) to march on

campus with confederate flags on Lee-Jackson Day and to stop allowing these groups to hold programs in Lee Chapel.

3) We demand that the University remove all confederate flags from its property, including those flags located within LEE Chapel.

4) We demand that the University issue and official apology for the University's participation in chattel slavery and a denunciation of Robert E. Lee's participation in slavery.

In July, W&L President Ruscio began the systematic capitulation to these demands when he stripped the replica memorial Army of Northern Virginia Battle Flags from the chamber which holds the "Recumbent Lee" statue in the LEE Chapel. Shortly thereafter, Confederate Flags were prohibited on the grounds, and those wishing to visit the Chapel were not allowed to carry a Confederate flag and were made to remove apparel that had a Confederate flag on it. Recently, W&L officials announced that classes would be canceled next school year in celebration of Martin Luther King, Jr. Day, and this year, the LEE Chapel was not available to the SCV and UDC for their annual Lee-Jackson Day memorial service, reportedly (and conveniently) due to renovations.

Throughout the weekend, we had Flaggers stationed at Washington & Lee, and Campus Security was right there to make sure none of "those flags" were allowed on the property. One of our flaggers, speaking of his conversation with one of the security officers, remarked, "I told him it was a sad day in America when the borders of W&L are more secure than those of the United States."



As our group walked up Letcher Avenue after the parade, we stopped for a photo, unveiling the 20' x 30' flag that will soon be raised on I-81 in Lexington.



Security guards rush to ensure an education did not break out at Washington & Lee University.

At this point, those who still wanted to make the trip to VMI, including our own Robert E. Lee, portrayed by an elderly Vietnam Vet, were forced to walk back down Letcher Ave, cross busy traffic twice, and climb a very steep, difficult to navigate entrance, in order to access the VMI parade grounds.



For those who were not keeping track, this means that officials at Washington & Lee have already capitulated to THREE of the FOUR ludicrous demands made by the agitators, in effect giving full credence and agreement to their assertion as to the €racist and dishonorable conduct of Robert E. Lee.

SHAME ON WASHINGTON & LEE UNIVERSITY FOR FORSAKING THE HONOR, MEMORY AND LEGACY OF ROBERT E LEE...AND SHAME ON THOSE WHO CONTINUE TO SUPPORT THE ADMINISTRATION AND THEIR COWARDLY ATTEMPTS TO APPEASE.

"Obstacles may retard, but they cannot long prevent the progress of a movement sanctified by its justice, and sustained by a virtuous people."-President Jefferson Davis

Despite the obstacles presented, we made it to VMI to pay our respects, although the hassle, delays, difficult hike, and lost time meant that many did not make it back in time for the Noon service at Lexington Presbyterian.

Our next and final report will share our experience at VMI and the final hours of flagging Lexington that afternoon.

Grayson Jennings

Virginia Flaggers  
P.O. Box 547  
Sandston VA 23150  
info@vaflaggers.com



April 7, 2014

## THE COMMITTEE

thecommitteewl@gmail.com

Dear Ladies and Gentlemen of Washington and Lee University's Board of Trustees:

After experiencing alienation and discomfort, we The Committee have assembled. The mission of The Committee is to create a community that welcomes students of color and to free those students from the psychological shackles that currently exist within Washington and Lee University, thereby enhancing the collective personal and educational well being of the student body. Your immediate action is required to help achieve this goal.

For over 150 years, the students of Washington and Lee University have reserved to themselves alone the authority to confront and sanction fellow students for failures of their duty of honor. This responsibility is the hallmark of Washington and Lee's Honor System.

The trust placed in students of this University is the continuation of a long tradition. Robert E. Lee, President of Washington College in 1865, took deliberate steps to establish the principle that students must accept responsibility for their own conduct. This commitment to honor is grounded upon a recognition of duty.

We established The Committee to fulfill our duty as honorable students of Washington and Lee University. The time has come for us, as students, to ask that the University hold itself responsible for its past and present dishonorable conduct and for the racist and dishonorable conduct of Robert E. Lee.

By appealing to conscience and by standing on the tenets upon which Washington and Lee University's Honor System was founded, we see the following demands as moral imperatives. Our administration, led by the Board of Trustees, President Ruscio, and Dean Demleitner, must immediately act to implement these mandates:

1. We demand that the University fully recognize Martin Luther King, Jr. Day on the undergraduate campus.
2. We demand that the University stop allowing neo-confederates to march on campus with confederate flags on Lee-Jackson Day and to stop allowing these groups to hold programs in Lee Chapel.
3. We demand that the University immediately remove all confederate flags from its property, including those flags located within Lee Chapel.
4. We demand that the University issue an official apology for the University's participation in chattel slavery and a denunciation of Robert E. Lee's participation in slavery.

We expect that from these immediate actions, a long-term, continued commitment to improving the state of racial justice and honor on campus will develop. We believe the student body is eager to learn about, work toward and directly confront both the past and current bigotry and racial discrimination found on our campus. We are confident that when these demands are met, our University will be one step closer to achieving a community that welcomes students of color and frees them from the psychological shackles that currently exist. We are eager to turn our campus into a shining example—a beacon of hope—for not only the town of Lexington, the Commonwealth of Virginia, and the South, but for the entire nation.

You have entrusted the student body with responsibility of ensuring that this University remains a place where honor is more than just a tradition. Honor is the moral fabric that binds us together through a spirit of trust and respect. We, the Committee, come to you to petition that the University do what is honorable. The Committee has expressed these concerns and demands to Dean Demleitner, it is now time for the Board of Trustees to act. We expect for these demands to be met by **September 1, 2014**. During the Board of Trustees spring meeting (**May 15-17**), we request that members of The Committee be given an opportunity to discuss the implementation of these reasonable and necessary demands. We look forward to receiving a response from a representative of the Board of Trustees by 5:00 pm on **April 16, 2014**.

With Expectancy,

**The Committee**

Thursday, January 29, 2015

## Va Flaggers Lee-Jackson Weekend Report Part III - VMI

After making our way to VMI, we assembled on the parade grounds, at Jackson's statue. Almost immediately, Cadets came out to speak with us, and to pose for photos with Generals Jackson and Lee. As three young men were standing with us, a man came out of the archway, very agitated and screaming the Cadets' names. He approached and demanded they get away from "those people" and "that thing". We can only assume that by "those people" he meant the re-enactors portraying Lee and Jackson, and the men and women gathered to honor them on the holiday, and by "that thing" he meant the Confederate Battle Flag.



For the remainder of the half hour or so we visited the grounds, a Cadet was posted at the arch to prevent any cadets from communicating with us.

One of our Flaggers placed two battle flags at Little Sorrell's marker. A VMI employee came out and told him that he would need to remove them when he left.



After paying our respects and singing a rousing version of Dixie for the Cadets who had gathered at open windows, we began to make our way back to downtown Lexington, to continue flagging. At this point, I noticed that one of our young Flagger was still at Jackson's statue. I was informed that he had told others that he was very angry about the treatment of the cadets earlier and the fact that he could not leave the stick flags at Little Sorrell's marker, so he had decided to post the colors at that spot for the rest of the day. I walked over to speak with him, and knew by the

set of his jaw as I approached that he was determined to make his stand.

It just so happens that this young man is the GGG nephew of VMI Cadet/Confederate Veteran Moses Ezekiel. My only concern at this point was to try and make sure he got a bite to eat, so when Va Flagger Bo Traywick (VMI Class of '69) volunteered to stand in his place while he went to get some lunch, he agreed to leave his post long enough to do so.



When he returned, he brought his 6x9 battle flag and remained at his post, in front of Jackson's stature for the remainder of the day. He reported to us that by this time the Cadet guard was relieved of his post, and that once again, Cadets began to approach him, ask why he was there, and show their support, and pose for photos. This continued throughout the afternoon.





Near dusk, an older man who said he was a VMI employee came out and told him that he would have to leave, since formation was scheduled to occur soon and that he would "offend" black cadets. After a brief, somewhat heated discussion, where the young man explained to the man who he was, why he was there, and described the numerous black Cadets that had just spoken with him and posed for photos, the young man removed the stick flags and left the campus.

As he left, he was stopped by a black man visiting campus, who made it a point to shake his hand and let him know that he understood completely about the flag he was carrying and the honor due Lee and Jackson and was sick and tired of people speaking "for him" in that regard. After that encounter, and as he was leaving campus, he was approached by a gentleman who said he had overheard the "discussion" with the VMI employee before he left the grounds and had gone to the Stonewall Jackson House and purchased a gift for him, presented him with the gift, and let him know how much he appreciated the stand he had taken that day.



I have heard that our detractors commented on the "graying" of our ranks, when photos of the huge crowds gathered in Lexington began to surface. That observation may be a fair one, but when I consider the stand that one 15 year old boy took, acting without prompting and with a pure heart, it occurred to me that once again, it was the youngest among us who led the way, and set the example for us all.

For those back in town, Flaggers reported another successful afternoon of Flagging, with overwhelmingly positive responses and MANY instances of folks stopping to shake our hands and thank us for being there.



In the afternoon, these young men joined us at the corner of Nelson and Main Street. At first, we thought they were part of a pledge for a college fraternity, but after talking with them, they told us they were high school kids just looking to join in the fun we were having. They said they had no opinion one way or the other regarding the Confederate flag and were just out there for satire. The signs were GREAT! We gave them some tips on improving sign visibility and proper flagging techniques. We even tried to teach them "God Save the Queen". They said they looked it up online before they came, but couldn't quite get the tune. I guess they don't teach "My Country Tis of Thee" in school any more. ;)



and finally, a message received from a VMI Cadet, sent Saturday afternoon:

*"Great showing by the Flaggers at the Institute today! It does my heart good, lookin' out of barracks and hearing Dixie. Keep up the good fight!"* □

As always, thank you all for your continued prayers and support!

Susan Hathaway  
Va Flaggers

Follow our blog: <http://vaflaggers.blogspot.com/>

Find us on FaceBook: <https://www.facebook.com/pages/The-Virginia-Flaggers/378823865585630>

Follow us on Twitter: [@thevaflaggers](https://twitter.com/thevaflaggers)



Virginia Flaggers  
P.O. Box 547  
Sandston VA 23150  
[info@vaflaggers.com](mailto:info@vaflaggers.com)

<http://vaflaggers.blogspot.com>



# RESIST

The odds don't matter anymore.

Great and Wise Henry looked backward and forward, on what had passed and what was yet to pass. He knew the Constitution was a Yankee trick. Oh, how they scorned and mocked...



**"When he asks my opinion of consolidation, of one power to reign over America with a strong hand, I will tell him I am persuaded of the rectitude of my honorable friend's opinion, (Mr. Mason,) that one government cannot reign over so extensive a country as this is, without absolute despotism. Compared to such a consolidation, small confederacies are little evils; though they ought to be recurred to but in case of necessity. Virginia and North Carolina are despised. They could exist separated from the rest of America. Maryland and Vermont were not overrun when out of the confederacy. Though it is not a desirable object, yet I trust that, on examination, it will be found that Virginia and North Carolina would not be swallowed up, in case it was necessary for them to be joined together."**

**Patrick Henry, 1788**

**[The Abbeville Institute](#)**

# A MAJOR VICTORY IN ARKANSAS FOR FREEDOM OF HERITAGE

January 31, 2015 By: admin \

[Download article as PDF](#)



On Wednesday, January 28th, 2015, the people of Arkansas witnessed a major victory in the struggle for heritage rights, common sense, and genuine brotherhood.

At the State Capitol in Little Rock, the House State Agencies and Government Affairs Committee rejected a proposal that would have removed Robert E. Lee from the State Holiday which jointly celebrates the lives of General Lee and Dr. Martin Luther King, Jr.

According to news reports, “opponents of the measure packed the committee hearing room.” The Arkansas Division of the S.C.V. was prominent in the opposition to this divisive piece of political correctness, and should be congratulated by all for their forthright actions.

John Crain, an attorney from Mountain Home, said that removing General Lee from the holiday would mean that, “my ancestry and my heritage is not worth honoring. I think Martin Luther King, if he were here today standing beside me, would tell you, ‘Why can’t we celebrate a birthday of two men, one of color and a white man? Surely we’ve progressed that far in our race relations’.”

This victory for all Americans is surely to confuse and anger the apostles of sanctimonious division and “identity politics”. The national media, ever committed to generating heat rather than light, will belittle us once again as racist troglodytes, and “demand a recount”.

But if we stand firm, and make our case sincerely, always taking the sensible high road, we will begin to make headway nationally as more people see that the “hate” in this debate is coming from those who wish to eliminate every vestige of our Confederate heritage.

I once had the privilege of spending a few days aboard the U.S.S. Coral Sea, one of our nation’s most honored aircraft carriers. I was curious about the old question, “How long does it take to turn an aircraft carrier around?”

The Captain explained that it depended on any number of circumstances; the speed of the ship, the seas and the weather, the preparation of the deck and the readiness of the crew.

“But the simple answer is,” he smiled, “that with every crewman working together, it doesn’t take as long as you think.”

With all of us working together in the concentrated effort to turn around the massive attack against us, it will take time, perhaps years. But it will not take as long as we think. And like the men on that great ship, it is our duty.

Ben Jones

Chief of Heritage Operations

<http://arkansastoothpick.com/2015/01/a-major-victory-in-arkansas-for-freedom-of-heritage/>

# Compatriots,

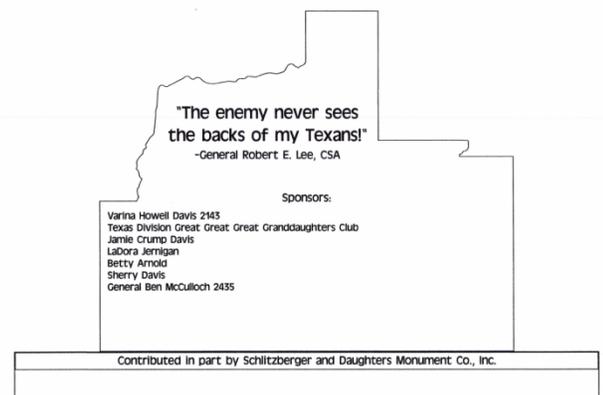
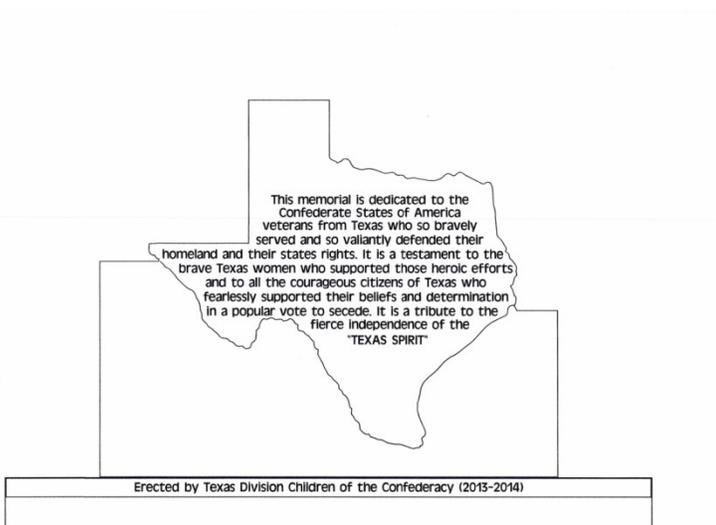
**The John H. Reagan Camp 2156** is very excited about the new black granite Confederate monument erected at the Confederate Veterans Memorial Plaza - Palestine by the Texas Division **Children of the Confederacy** in honor of the Texas Soldiers who served the Confederacy. See event flier below.

In addition, the John H. Reagan Camp 2156 has now ordered their 2nd of an eventual six 36 in. x 36 in. interpretive markers for the block wall at the Confederate Veterans Memorial Plaza in Palestine. This one is titled, "**A Great Awakening of Christian Revivals in the Confederate Armies.**" To view the graphics of what has been ordered, please go to the camp website link below and scroll down to the lower part of the "About Us" page and click on "Confederate Veterans Memorial Plaza - Palestine, Wall Interpretive Marker 2." I hope y'all like the new marker design as much as we do in the Reagan Camp. <http://www.reaganscvcamp.org/about.html>

## SEE THEM ON THE PAGES BELOW

FYI, there is still plenty of **brick paver** room at the memorial plaza to honor more Confederate soldiers and officers as well as SCV Camp's, UDC Chapters, or OCR Chapters. The **order forms** are located on the home page of the camp web site: [www.reaganscvcamp.org](http://www.reaganscvcamp.org) All proceeds from brick paver donations fund the further development, utilities, and maintenance of the Confederate Veterans Memorial Plaza - Palestine.

**Respectfully yours,**  
**Marc Robinson**  
**1st Lt. Cmdr.**  
**John H. Reagan Camp 2156**  
**Sons of Confederate Veterans**





## Monument Dedication Ceremony Honoring Confederate Veterans from Texas

### When:

March 14, 2015. The Dedication ceremony will begin at 11:00 a.m.

### Where:

The Ceremony will be held at the Confederate Veterans Memorial Plaza – Palestine at 600 West Oak Street, Palestine, Texas

### What:

The beautiful black granite monument dedicated to the Confederate States of America Veterans from Texas and recently placed in the CVMP-Palestine, was the result of a fund raising effort by the 2013-2014 Texas Division Children of the Confederacy, past President Gabby Vasek, to honor these veterans. It is a beautiful monument that will honor these Texas CSA veterans for many years to come.

### Hotel information:

LaQuinta Inn and Suites, 3000 South Loop 256, Palestine, TX. 903-723-1387  
Comfort Suites, 301 Willow Creek Pkwy, Palestine, TX, 866-460-7456  
Hampton Inn and Suites, 2700 S Main Loop 256, Palestine, TX, 844-879-4054

### Attire/arms:

Confederate military uniforms and 1860 period civilian dress is encouraged, but not required. Please bring your period musket or a Confederate flag with pole if you would like to help in the ceremony. Your attendance and/or participation will be greatly appreciated!

### Memorial brick paver donations:

If you would also like to honor a Confederate veteran, CSA government official, SCV camp, UDC or OCR chapter and at the same time support the maintenance and future improvements of the Confederate Veterans Memorial Plaza in Palestine, one way is by placing a brick paver in this plaza, forms are

available at [www.reaganscvcamp.org](http://www.reaganscvcamp.org) . 100 percent of the proceeds are used for the memorial plaza.

## Contact information:

Sandy Vasek

Children of the Confederacy representative

[evasek@sbcglobal.net](mailto:evasek@sbcglobal.net)

home 281-373-3936, cell 281-794-5319

or

Marc Robinson

Commander, East Texas Brigade, Sons of Confederate Veterans

[mrobinson1836@yahoo.com](mailto:mrobinson1836@yahoo.com)

cell: 903-676-6069



# TEXAS IN THE WAR FOR SOUTHERN INDEPENDENCE



## TEXAS VALOR

painting by Andrew Harris

One of the first regiments from Texas to win recognition and fame in the war was the 1st Texas Infantry Regiment and the 1st Texas Cavalry Regiment. The 1st Texas Cavalry Regiment was the first formed in Virginia in August 1861. It was made up of ten companies of mostly East Texas men from Houston, Galveston, and Nacogdoches counties. Galveston and Trinity County troops were added later.

This Regiment was part of Hood's Texas Brigade and served under commanders General John Bell Hood, General J.B. Magruder, General George E. Pickett, and General John H. "Rip" Taylor. The 1st Texas Cavalry Regiment was the only Texas unit to fight at the Battle of Gettysburg. The 1st Texas Cavalry Regiment was also involved in the siege of Fort Fisher and later in the Antietam Campaign. In April of 1862 the regiment had 477 men and was the largest Texas unit in the army. It suffered 82 percent and though this was not the highest number of casualties in the Confederacy or the Union in a single day, during the same period. The Texans lost their battle flag during the battle. The Texans lost their battle flag when they recaptured the corn field.

The 1st Texas Cavalry Regiment was active from August 1861 until April 1865 when the war ended. They had fought in the Battle of Shiloh, the Battle of Stones River, the Battle of Fredericksburg, the Battle of Gettysburg, the Battle of Chickamauga, the Battle of Atlanta, the Battle of Peachtree, and the final Campaign of Appomattox Court House.



## WALKER'S TEXAS DIVISION BATTLE FLAG

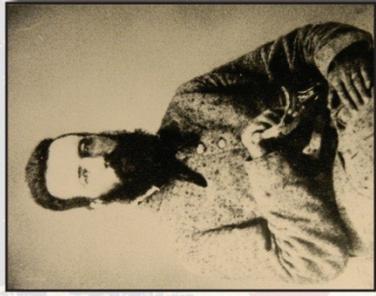
Texas fought under many flags during the War for Southern Independence. One of the few that have been preserved is this flag of an unknown regiment, Walker's Division, which was captured by Union forces at the Battle of Shiloh in April 1862. It is now in the collection of the National Archives and Records Administration.

Very little actual fighting occurred on Texas soil. One major reason was the men who fought under this flag, Union General Nathaniel Banks launched an expedition to capture the city of Vicksburg, Mississippi and forced up the river with the consent of East Texas as his objective.

General Richard Taylor, son of President Zachary Taylor was commander of the Confederate army in western Louisiana. The Texans who flew this flag were part of this command. General Taylor forces entered the Union troops at Mansfield, and again at the Battle of Mansfield. The Texans were defeated and were forced to retreat. The troops were severely defeated and were forced to retreat. Banks' grand plan for the capturing of Texas was to capture the city of Vicksburg, Mississippi.

The Battle of Mansfield was a tactical draw. The Union forces were unable to capture the city of Vicksburg. The Texas 5th Cavalry Regiment was the only Texas unit to fight at the battle. The Texas 5th Cavalry Regiment was the only Texas unit to fight at the battle.

Walker's Texas Division troops were engaged in other battles and skirmishes but to Texas, none were more important than those. The chief reason that Texas did not become a state was because of the war. The war was the cause of the Texas Revolution. The Louisiana troops, defeated the Union troops before they arrived at the eastern border.



## GENERAL JOHN GREGG

Among the general officers furnished by the state of Texas was General John Gregg. He was born in 1812 in Lawrence County, Alabama. After graduation from college and a few years of teaching, he became interested in law. In 1835 he moved to Parkfield, Texas and was elected district judge in Freestone County, serving in this office until 1860.

After his first wife, Maria Williams, died, John returned to Alabama and married Mary Frances Girth, the daughter of one of the wealthiest plantation owners in Alabama. His father-in-law was a strong Unionist who was willing to give up his plantation and move to the North. John, however, was a strong secessionist and his son-in-law, definitely not a Unionist. Most likely this was a factor in John's returning to Texas with his new bride. They soon had two children.

Gregg practiced law for a few years and in a partnership with Morris Beagan, a brother of John H. Reagan of Palestine, Texas, started the first newspaper in Freestone County, the Freestone County Pioneer. He also owned a farm and other property.

When Texas began to consider secession, John, at the age of 24, became a member of the Texas Secession Convention, which he had helped to form. Gregg was one of the men selected by the secession convention to go to the Provisional Congress of the Confederate States in Montgomery, Alabama. He went with the Congress when it moved to Richmond, Virginia.

Immediately after the battle of First Manassas, Gregg assigned his seat in Congress and again receiving a commission of colonel, returned to Texas to recruit and organize the 7th Texas Cavalry Regiment. This new fighting regiment was organized in the fall of 1861. The 7th Texas Cavalry Regiment was the only Texas unit to fight at the battle of Shiloh. The 7th Texas Cavalry Regiment was the only Texas unit to fight at the battle of Shiloh.

His command included the 3rd, 10th, 30th, 41st, and 50th Tennessee, the 1st Tennessee Battalion and his old 7th Texas regiment. He led this 3,000 man brigade in the battle of Shiloh. The 7th Texas Cavalry Regiment was the only Texas unit to fight at the battle of Shiloh. The 7th Texas Cavalry Regiment was the only Texas unit to fight at the battle of Shiloh.

General Gregg also fought in and was wounded at the battle of Chickamauga, the battle of Atlanta, the battle of Peachtree, and the battle of Appomattox Court House. He was the only Texas general to be wounded in the war. He was the only Texas general to be wounded in the war.

The efforts of his widow, Mary to claim her husband's body is a saga in itself. With courage and determination she buried the battle site and through his body home to Texas. She was the only woman to be buried in the battle of Shiloh. She was the only woman to be buried in the battle of Shiloh.

Mary Gregg is included among the women who began the Memorial Hospital in Montgomery, Texas. She was the only woman to be buried in the battle of Shiloh. She was the only woman to be buried in the battle of Shiloh.

Gregg County, Texas, organized in 1871, is named in his honor.

When the war began, Texas was only partially settled and was still very much a frontier state. Even so, Texas' participation in the conflict was one of which any Texan of that generation and all future generations can be proud.

These officers were obviously men of courage and uncommon valor. Statisticians say that their casualty rate was five times as high as a common soldier—evidence that they almost always led from the front of their commands, not at the rear as was the custom of Federal officers.

The fact that many of these officers were promoted during their brave men had much to do with the advancement of the officers. The Texas fighting men were feared and respected by their enemies and often praised by the leaders of the Confederate armies.

## TEXAS SENT MORE 75,000 OF HER SONS TO SERVE IN THE ARMIES OF THE CONFEDERACY

Texas troops took part in all the major battles of the War for Southern Independence including, but not limited to the following:

- Gaines' Mill, Malvern Hill, Mechanicsville, Seven Pines, First and Second Manassas, Shiloh, Church, Fredericksburg, Fort Donelson, Corinth, Sharpsburg/Antietam, Chickamauga, First and Second Battle of the Wilderness, Kennesaw, the Atlanta Campaign, Gettysburg, Petersburg, and Appomattox Court House.

Texas men also fought in smaller battles and skirmishes such as: Adams Hill, Arkansas Post, Pea Ridge, the Red River Campaign, Clonita, Pass, Sabine Pass, Sibley Campaign, Battle of Galveston, Cotton Plant, and the final battle of the war—the Battle of Palmito Ranch.

The Texas troops were defeated in a number of these conflicts, but their determination, courage and valor were never questioned by any who fought with or against them.

A. Dale Roberts

Among these men, 135 were officers, with the rank of colonel or above. The highest ranking officer chosen to command the armies of the western part of the Confederacy was a Texan, General Albert Sidney Johnston. Johnston resigned his position in the Federal army to join the Confederate forces. As President Jefferson Davis looked over his officers, he said of A.S. Johnston, "I knew I had one general." He also said of him, "He is the greatest soldier, the ablest man, civil or military, Confederate or Federal then living."

General Johnston, a full general, was killed in the bloody battle of Shiloh Church in April 1862. Lieutenant-general John Bell Hood, who organized the famous "Hood's Texas Brigade", was from Texas. He and his command figured prominently in many of the major battles such as Gaines' Mill, Sharpsburg/Antietam Creek, Gettysburg and a number of others. He continued to serve after having lost a leg and the use of one arm from battle wounds.

Three major-generals were all Texas men: Tom Green, who was killed at Blair's Landing in April of 1864; John H. Wharton, who served as commander of the famous Terry's Texas Rangers, and Samuel B. Maxwell. Texas also produced 32 Brigadier Generals, 97 colonels and hundreds of lower grade officers.

# A Great Awakening of Christian Revival in the Confederate Armies



## Christian Revival & Leadership in the Confederate Armies

The Third Great Awakening of Christian revival in the South began in the late 1850s but stalled with the onset of the Civil War. While the revival remained dampened in the Northern states, in mid-1863, the flames of revival were fanned once again in the South. Beginning with Robert E. Lee's Army of Northern Virginia, a series of revival meetings broke out throughout the entire Confederate Army.

Confederate Chaplain J. William Jones, a graduate of Southern Baptist Theological Seminary, ministered to troops under Generals Robert E. Lee, Thomas J. "Stonewall" Jackson, and A. P. Hill. Jones reported that he ministered to thousands of men, many of whom had never been baptized. He is described as having baptized as many as 220 soldiers in one year and stated that during the war, over 150,000 Confederate soldiers were converted.

General John B. Gordon of Georgia related that every camp had religious affairs and that "thousands became soldiers of the Cross." The 46th Georgia reported 14 converts in two weeks and reports of great revivals were given in units from the Texas Rangers to units in Florida and Mississippi.

The Union Navy had attempted to blockade all Southern ports, but Rev. Moses Hoge, Presbyterian minister in Richmond, risked his life running

—David Franklin

the blockade out of Charleston, and later out of Wilmington, North Carolina, and finally out of Great Britain, for the new converts. The British Foreign Bible Society supplied the South with 150,000 Bibles, 50,000 New Testaments, and 250,000 copies of the Gospels and Psalms bound together.

The South apparently had an unusual amount of Christian leadership in its military and government. LT GEN Leonidas Foltz, described as "the most loved general in the Army of Tennessee" by his troops, was the Episcopal Bishop of Louisiana, Brigadier General William Pennington, and Major General John C. Breckinridge were all before and after the War and others such as Lee, Jackson, and President Jefferson Davis were known to be deeply committed to the Christian cause.

All these circumstances led to the Christian revivals in the Confederate military services to be one of the most long-lasting effects of the War. Itself. From the proliferation of YMCA's to new churches which exist to this day, the spiritual renewal in the Confederate armies is still felt today.

## John A. Broadus

In 1862 the Mason, Georgia Daily Intelligencer reported that Broadus had ministered throughout the Confederacy. According to the Action Institute for the Study of the American South, Broadus was a member of the General Assembly of the General Assembly of the Southern Baptist Convention, the first denomination to establish a seminary within the Confederate Army was the Southern Baptist Theological Seminary in Nashville, Tennessee. Broadus received a Master's Degree in 1850 and began teaching in a private school in Florida County, Georgia. He was also a member of the Southern Baptist Historical Library and Archives. In 1850 he was elected as one of the founding four professors of the Southern Baptist Theological Seminary.

Broadus ministered with the 1st Virginia Cavalry in the invasion of the South, the seminary was closed and would not reopen until 1865. Broadus was promoted as a regimental chaplain in the Army of Northern Virginia and led the 1st Virginia Cavalry during the Confederate Revival swept the South during those difficult years. Broadus was a member of the Southern Baptist Convention and ministered to Confederate soldiers rebuffed by the Union Army.

"We Pray for You at Home," Library of Congress. Broadus also became a member of the Southern Baptist Convention in 1850 and was elected as one of the founding four professors of Northern Virginia and ministered about Broadus.

Broadus was a preacher and minister to the 1st Virginia Cavalry. He was a member of the Southern Baptist Convention in 1850 and was elected as one of the founding four professors of Northern Virginia and ministered about Broadus. Broadus was a member of the Southern Baptist Convention in 1850 and was elected as one of the founding four professors of Northern Virginia and ministered about Broadus. Broadus was a member of the Southern Baptist Convention in 1850 and was elected as one of the founding four professors of Northern Virginia and ministered about Broadus.



most notable by far. He preached the funeral of the other three presidents and became known as one of the great American preachers. Charles Spurgeon, great British Baptist preacher, said of Broadus: "I have never heard of a man so well known as 'The Baptist' in America, invited to preach in New York, London, and other cities, and to preach in New York but to Europe to preach. He was invited to preach in New York but declined."

Broadus was in much demand for his sermons. He was a member of the Southern Baptist Convention in 1850 and was elected as one of the founding four professors of Northern Virginia and ministered about Broadus. Broadus was a member of the Southern Baptist Convention in 1850 and was elected as one of the founding four professors of Northern Virginia and ministered about Broadus.

## Thomas J. "Stonewall" Jackson



LT GEN Thomas J. "Stonewall" Jackson was a widely respected figure in the South. He was a military strategist, an inspirational leader, and a man of deep faith. He was known for his quick thinking and his ability to lead his troops to victory. He was a man of deep faith and a man of deep faith.

Although best known for his quick thinking and his ability to lead his troops to victory, Jackson was also a man of deep faith. He was a man of deep faith and a man of deep faith. He was a man of deep faith and a man of deep faith.

South took him in as one of their own. He was a man of deep faith and a man of deep faith. He was a man of deep faith and a man of deep faith.

South took him in as one of their own. He was a man of deep faith and a man of deep faith. He was a man of deep faith and a man of deep faith. He was a man of deep faith and a man of deep faith.

South took him in as one of their own. He was a man of deep faith and a man of deep faith. He was a man of deep faith and a man of deep faith. He was a man of deep faith and a man of deep faith.

South took him in as one of their own. He was a man of deep faith and a man of deep faith. He was a man of deep faith and a man of deep faith. He was a man of deep faith and a man of deep faith.

## Robert E. Lee



As all Spiritual Awakenings, the Revival of 1863 had many facets. It was somewhat of a "young-up" revival, coming from the troops and the people. It was a revival of the faith and a revival of the faith.

It was a revival of the faith and a revival of the faith. It was a revival of the faith and a revival of the faith. It was a revival of the faith and a revival of the faith.

It was a revival of the faith and a revival of the faith. It was a revival of the faith and a revival of the faith. It was a revival of the faith and a revival of the faith.

It was a revival of the faith and a revival of the faith. It was a revival of the faith and a revival of the faith. It was a revival of the faith and a revival of the faith.

Confederate States has, in the name of the people, appointed August 21st as a day of fasting, humiliation, and prayer... requested to cause divine services, suitable to the occasion, to be performed in their respective commands. Soldiers! We beseech you to attend to the voice of your Heavenly Father and strength."

Although General Lee was not in the forefront of the revival effort, he was definitely showing the way. There is no way to overstate the impact of the Great Confederate Revival. General Lee's spiritual leadership, Army of Northern Virginia, August 12, 1863, which led to the President of the



Reconstruction. Men by Hopy, 1870. (See above, Robert E. Lee's soldiers being baptized in Virginia, 1863. Union soldiers peacefully watch from the north bank. The battle flag of Episcopal Bishop and Confederate Lieutenant General Leonidas Foltz, 1st General Division left.

# 10 little known facts about the Confederacy

"1. By the latter part of 1864 the CSA was moving toward ending slavery. In fact, there are indications that the Confederacy would have ended slavery even if it had survived the war, as prominent historians like J. G. Randall and David Donald have acknowledged (see Randall and Donald, *The Civil War and Reconstruction*, Lexington, Massachusetts: D.C. Heath and Company, 1969, p. 522).

Critics will reply that the CSA only began to move toward emancipation as an act of desperation in the face of imminent defeat. If so, this proves that Southern independence was more important to Confederate leaders than was the continuation of slavery, that when push came to shove they were willing to abandon slavery in order to achieve independence.

However, this being duly noted, it should be pointed out that it was by no means clear in late 1864 that Southern defeat was imminent. Historians Herman Hattaway and Richard Beringer note that even in February 1865, just two months before the war ended, "a considerable degree of determination and high morale did still persist" in the South (Jefferson Davis, *Confederate President*, University Press of Kansas, 2002, p. 357). Militarily speaking, the situation was far from hopeless in late 1864. Even when the Army of Northern Virginia surrendered in April 1865, the situation was not completely hopeless. At the end of the war, fewer than one-third of Confederate troops on active duty were deployed against either of the two main Union armies. One of the arguments made by Southern leaders who opposed the arming and freeing of slaves was that the South's situation did not yet require such a measure. There is certainly room for debate about the CSA's military prospects after the fall of Atlanta in September 1864. It's also true that Confederate leaders felt that using slaves as soldiers was a matter of urgent military necessity. However, few if any Confederate leaders believed the South would be defeated by April if they didn't arm and emancipate the slaves. George Rable noted that even after the fall of Richmond "a belief that somehow independence could yet be won persisted" (in Hattaway and Beringer, *Jefferson Davis, Confederate President*, p. 357). Historian Robert F. Durden of Duke University echoed the observations of Hattaway, Beringer, and Rable:

Wracked though the Southerners were with the agony of a war they were losing, most Confederates, contrary to those persons who prefer to read history backward, did not know in November 1864 that they were beaten. (The Gray and the Black: The Confederate Debate on Emancipation, Louisiana Paperback Edition, Baton Rouge: Louisiana State University Press, 2000, reprint of 1972 edition, p. 101)

One could correctly observe that the only reason the Union started using black troops was that Union casualties were mounting and that Northern resistance to the draft was increasing. One could also point out that Lincoln strongly resisted using black troops until intense pressure from the Radical Republicans coupled with mounting Union casualties caused him to change his mind. Even after Lincoln agreed to the use of free blacks and ex-slaves as troops, he refused to give them equal pay until forced to do so by Congress.

In his book *Forced Into Glory: Abraham Lincoln's White Dream* (Chicago: Johnson Publishing Company, 2000), African-American author Lerone Bennett presents evidence that Lincoln only issued the Emancipation Proclamation in response to increasing pressure from the Radicals and in order to blunt the effect of a more drastic confiscation measure that Congress had already passed. Bennett also discusses evidence that Lincoln worked to minimize the effects of the proclamation almost as soon as he issued it.

In the American Revolution, the Continental Army only began to use black troops as an act of desperation because the army was running short of soldiers and because the British had offered freedom to American slaves who would fight in the British army (Henry Wiencick, *An Imperfect God: George Washington, His Slaves, and the Creation of America*, New York: Farrar, Straus, and Giroux, 2003, pp. 196-22; James and Lois Horton, *In Hope of Liberty: Culture, Community and Protest Among Northern Free Blacks, 1700-1860*, New York: Oxford University Press, 1997, pp. 55-71). George Washington initially barred blacks from enlisting in the army. He relented because he was desperate

for more soldiers, because white enlistment was falling dramatically. (Wiencick, *An Imperfect God*, pp. 196-227). Even then, some New England militias continued to bar blacks from enlistment. It took the Continental Congress two years to formally agree to black enlistment. Another factor that influenced the decision to use slaves and free blacks as soldiers in the Continental Army was the fact that thousands of American slaves were flocking to British lines in response to the British offer of emancipation.

I might add that after the Revolutionary War, American negotiators insisted on a provision in the treaty that ended the war, the Treaty of Paris, that the British return any American slaves who had fled to British lines during the war. One of those negotiators was none other than John Adams. In fact, Adams warmly endorsed the provision (Wiencick, *An Imperfect God*, p. 254). To their credit, the British later violated this provision and evacuated thousands of slaves with them when they left America.

I might also add that when it began to appear that the British weren't going to return the runaway American slaves, George Washington demanded a meeting with the British general who was in charge of enforcing the Treaty of Paris during the evacuation from New York, General Guy Carleton. Washington tried to persuade Carleton to honor the treaty provision on the return of runaway slaves. To his credit, Carleton stood his ground and refused to hand over the slaves. Carleton said the Americans could apply for compensation for the slaves, but that he would not return them. Carleton insisted the slaves were now free and that it would bring dishonor on England to return them after promising them safe refuge. Lord North, the British prime minister, called Carleton's stand "an act of justice." King George III himself voiced support for Carleton's action "in the fullest and most ample manner." One very rarely finds any mention of these facts in American history books.

The American colonies' policies on black troops during the Revolutionary War and their insistence on the return of American slaves after the war are admittedly embarrassing and contrary to the spirit of the Declaration of Independence. However, to my knowledge, no American historian has expressed regret that the Americans won the war.

2. The Confederate president himself, Jefferson Davis, came to strongly support ending slavery. So did CSA Secretary of State Judah Benjamin, Governor William Smith of Virginia, and leading CSA Congressmen Ethelbert Barksdale and Duncan Kenner (who was one of the largest slaveholders in the South).

3. The CSA's two highest ranking generals, Robert E. Lee and Joseph E. Johnston, both disliked slavery and supported emancipation in various forms. Lee called slavery "a moral and political evil." Johnston called it "a curse." (Johnston initially opposed using slaves as soldiers only because he feared it would be disruptive and ineffective, not because he had any sympathy for slavery. He later came to support the proposal.) Other Confederate generals who supported emancipation included General Daniel Govan, General John Kelly, and General Mark Lowrey.

4. The majority of Confederate generals did not own slaves and did not come from slaveholding families (Hattaway and Beringer, *Jefferson Davis, Confederate President*, p. 37).

5. Thousands of African Americans, Hispanics, and Indians fought for the Confederacy. Many of the slaves who served in the Confederate army did so because they hoped that by doing so they would be granted freedom after the war or because they were specifically promised freedom if they would serve. The same was true of most of the slaves who fought for the Continental Army during the Revolutionary War.

The chief inspector of the U.S. Sanitary Commission, Dr. Lewis Steiner, reported that he saw about 3,000 well-armed black Confederate soldiers in Stonewall Jackson's army--he added that those soldiers were "manifestly an integral portion of the Southern Confederate Army" (Issac W. Heysinger, *Antietam and the Maryland and Virginia Campaigns of 1862*, New York: Neale Publishing Company, 1912, pp. 122-123; cf. John J. Dwyer, general editor, *The War Between the States: America's Uncivil War*, Denton, Texas: Bluebonnet Press, 2005, p. 409).

Three Confederate states authorized free blacks to enlist in state militia units. The first to do so was Tennessee, which passed a law on June 21, 1861, authorizing the recruitment of state militia units composed of "free persons of color" between the ages of 15 and 50. In 1862, Louisiana assembled the all-black 1st Louisiana Native Guard, and Alabama authorized the enlistment of creoles for a state militia unit in Mobile.

6. The Confederate Congress specified that black soldiers in the Confederate army were to receive the same pay, rations, and clothing that white soldiers received. In contrast, black soldiers in the Union army were paid much less than white soldiers were paid for over a year. The Union army began using former slaves and free blacks as soldiers in September 1862. They were paid \$7 per month. Technically, they were paid \$10 a month, but they were forced to pay a clothing allowance of \$3, which meant their net monthly pay was only \$7. White soldiers, on the other hand, received \$13 per month and were not forced to pay a clothing allowance. Thus, in the Union army white soldiers were paid nearly twice as much as black soldiers were paid. Black Union soldiers didn't start receiving equal pay until June 1864. When the Confederate Congress authorized the recruitment of slaves as soldiers, it stipulated that they were to receive "the same rations, clothing and compensation as are allowed to other troops" (An Act to Increase the Military Force of the Confederate States, March 13, 1865, Section 3). In addition, when the Confederate Congress authorized salaries for black musicians in the Confederate army in 1862, it specified that they were to receive the same pay as white army musicians, stating "whenever colored persons are employed as musicians in any regiment or company, they shall be entitled to the same pay now allowed by law to musicians regularly enlisted."

7. According to the 1860 census, only 31 percent of Southern families owned slaves. Seventy-five percent of the families that owned slaves, owned less than ten and often worked side by side with them in the fields. Approximately half of the free blacks in America lived in the South. The percentage of Southern citizens who held slaves was probably no more than 25 percent (some scholars put the percentage as low as 10 percent).

8. The Confederate Constitution allowed for the admission of free states to the Confederacy, banned the overseas slave trade, and permitted Confederate states to abolish slavery within their borders if they wanted to do so. During the Confederate debate on emancipation, both sides readily acknowledged that under the Confederate Constitution each state had the absolute right to abolish slavery within its borders (see, for example, Durden, *The Gray and the Black*, pp. 98, 115, 170, 195).

9. The Confederate Constitution protected every right for its citizens that the U.S. Constitution protected for U.S. citizens, if not more (Charles Roland, *The Confederacy*, University of Chicago Press, 1960, pp. 25-27; see also below). Even during the war, the Confederacy held free elections and enjoyed a vibrant free press (William J. Cooper, *Jefferson Davis, American*, Vintage Books Edition, New York: Vintage Books, 2001, pp. 349-519; see also below).

10. The Confederate Constitution contained added protections against runaway government spending, excessive taxation, and harmful protective tariffs. Historian Allan Nevins said the following about the Confederate Constitution:

It differed from the old national model chiefly in its emphasis on State rights. . . . The general welfare clauses were omitted. Any Confederate official acting within the limits of a State might be impeached by the State legislature, though the Constitution, laws made under it, and treaties were declared "the supreme law of the land". . . .

The most remarkable features of the new instrument sprang from the purifying and reforming zeal of the delegates, who hoped to create a more guarded and virtuous government than that of Washington. The President was to hold office six years, and be ineligible for reelection. Expenditures were to be limited by a variety of careful provisions, and the President was given budgetary control over appropriations which Congress could break only by a two-thirds vote." {Michael T. Griffith}



130 years ago, E. Benjamin Andrews, then President of Brown University, himself a veteran of the Yankee army, said:

**"The question of greatness is a relative thing and we in America will probably always differ as to the rank of our prominent men. But if any American father were asked which of our great men he would most want his own son to resemble, that father, if he were wise, would be compelled to answer, "Robert E. Lee"."**

Nothing can be added to that statement. Education can propose no finer service than to offer the character of Lee as the pattern upon which youth may shape its hope.

**LEE: The Final Achievement  
Speeches by Dr. Francis Pendleton Gaines,  
President Washington and Lee University  
1933**



# NEVER FORGET

February 16, 1865

Columbia, SC





## WITH A LITTLE HELP:

*Friends of the James Farm keep the grounds young.* STORY AND PHOTOGRAPHY BY SARAH ALBAN

**NOT ALL KIDS** are glued to their cell phones. At the Jesse James Farm in Kearney, at least one embraces history by retracing Jesse's steps on his old stomping grounds.

At the Black Powder Shoot last summer, thirteen-year-old Nathan Rozzel stepped up to a ten-pace line and pulled back the hammer on a .45 Long Colt Bisley, ready to take his shot. Forty others had gathered for the shoot sponsored by Friends of the James Farm. By paying a \$20 contest fee, the Friends help preserve the home. Contributions go to Clay County, which bought the farm in 1978 and runs the daily upkeep. Friends, who ebb and flow in the hundreds, add charm to the farm. They restore artifacts such as Frank's wife's diploma. They bring Civil War historians on site to speak and promote research.

Vince Powers, a member, is an actual James relative. A recently discovered James cousin, Vince drove eight hundred miles from Texas to learn about his relatives. Just a year ago, Vince didn't even know about the Jameses.

That all changed after Vince used an on-line ancestry service, and he learned about his roots. Then he went to track them down. A Friends docent gave him a house tour for free, after which he veered off on the property to explore on his own, at one point knocking on the house as if to test its durability. Vince left no rock unturned in his quest to explore his roots.

Thirty-five years ago, that wouldn't have been possible. Owned by descendants, the James Farm lay in disrepair.

"I can't even describe how derelict it was," former Friends President Christie Kennard says. "The roof had completely collapsed on the west side. There was a milderewy smell. Everything was overgrown."

In 1978, Clay County opened the house to tourists, many wondering how they could help. Thus began the Friends of the Jameses.

Despite being experts on the past, the Friends are unsure about the future.

"Most of us grew up knowing who Jesse James was," says Kevin Mackel, Black

Powder Shoot co-organizer. "But if you're a video-game kid," he trails off. "How do you reach that next generation?"

Nathan might know how. But he couldn't be bothered. He was too busy shooting his gun under the sun, as Jesse had done, to ask.

### BECOME A FRIEND OF THE FARM

- \$20 Border Ruffian
- \$30 Bushwhacker
- \$100 Road Agent
- \$250 Long Rider

816-736-8500 • [www.jessejames.org](http://www.jessejames.org)

Know of a building that needs saving? Let us know! Email the building's location, known history, and contact information to [info@missourilife.com](mailto:info@missourilife.com).



# Abbeville Institute

The Abbeville Blog

## Thomas J. “Stonewall” Jackson

By **Brion McClanahan** on Jan 21, 2015



*This essay is part of the chapter “Southerners” in Brion McClanahan’s **The Politically Incorrect Guide to Real American Heroes**.*

The Northern essayist and Republican partisan E.L. Godkin wrote following the death of “Stonewall” Jackson in 1863 that Jackson was “the most extraordinary phenomenon of this extraordinary war. Pure, honest, simple-minded, unselfish, and brave, his death is a loss to the whole of America, for, whatever be the result of this war, the United States will enjoy the honor of having bred and educated him.” Godkin claimed him because he recognized that Jackson was more than a representative of the South, he was an American hero, pure and simple.

Jackson was born in 1824 in Clarksburg, Virginia. While the Jacksons had a solid reputation in America, they came from humble beginnings. Both his great-grandfather and great-grandmother arrived in America as indentured servants having both been convicted of theft. They fell in love on the voyage over, and once they had satisfied their indentures, married and moved to the frontier where they acquired vast tracts of land. Both Jackson’s great-grandfather and grandfather served with distinction in the American War for Independence and his great-grandmother used the Jackson homestead as a refuge for dislocated American settlers during the war.

Jackson’s father died when he was a boy, something both Jackson and Lee shared in common, and his mother, left with a crushing debt, sold their farm and moved to a one-room rental. Jackson was only six and was left an orphan when his mother died five years later. After bouncing between relatives for a few years, Jackson eventually settled on his uncle’s frontier farm. He was largely self-educated and even taught one of his uncle’s slaves how to read and write.

Though he lacked a formal education and had difficulty with the entrance exams, Jackson was admitted to West Point in 1842. He was at the bottom of his class, but he studied with a dogged determination that became a well-known character trait, and by the time he graduated in 1846, he was seventeenth out of fifty-nine cadets. Jackson did not choose the military because he longed to be a soldier. What Jackson wanted most was to sharpen his character as a man. The military, in his mind, offered the best opportunity for success and respect. He is known for his military acumen, but his career and the famous decisions he made in battle were shaped by his character. Like Washington and Lee, the War did not define them, they defined the War.

Jackson was socially awkward as a young man and had several eccentricities throughout his life, often to the amusement of his contemporaries. Unlike Lee and many Virginians from the tidewater region, he did not have the social refinement typical of Southern gentlemen. But Jackson was the perfect example of what Thomas Jefferson and other members of the founding generation considered the “natural aristocracy.” In addition to honesty, integrity and determination—while a West Point cadet informed his cousin that, “I can do anything I will to do”—Jackson had talent, a keen mind, and the ability to make quick, correct decisions on the battlefield. He would have been successful in any endeavor he chose.

Like many generals on both sides in the War Between the States, Jackson received his first taste of combat in the Mexican War. He was commissioned a second lieutenant and saw action as part of the

1st U.S. Artillery Regiment. He was awarded more battlefield promotions than any other American officer during the war and garnered Winfield Scott's highest regard when the conflict was over. Jackson exhibited the calmness in battle that later earned him the nickname "Stonewall" during the War Between the States. He had a cannon ball land between his legs, stood his ground under a hail of lead at Chapultepec, and encouraged his men to fight because, in his words, "I am not hit!" His bravery was never questioned.

It was also during the Mexican War that Jackson reinforced his Christian beliefs. If there is any surviving legacy from Thomas Jackson, it is that of the ideal Christian soldier, or perhaps the model Christian man. His unflinching actions on the battlefield were guided by his resolute Christian faith. He flirted with Catholicism while in Mexico (and became somewhat fluent in Spanish), was baptized in the Episcopal Church, and finally settled on Presbyterianism upon his return to Virginia. A common description of Jackson is that he lived by the New Testament but fought by the Old. He was a warm, tender, dutiful and faithful husband. His second wife, Mary Anna, wrote he, "was a great advocate for marriage, appreciating the gentler sex so highly that whenever he met one of the "unappropriated blessings" under the type of truest womanhood, he would wish that one of his bachelor friends could be fortunate enough to win her" (his first wife died in childbirth).

Jackson spent tens years as an instructor of artillery at the Virginia Military Institute. He was not well liked by the students or the alumni and received the nickname "Tom Fool." His uncle and mother had been teachers, but Jackson did not receive their gift of pedagogy. He memorized his lectures and answered questions by repeating what he had previously memorized. A second question from a student resulted in punishment. Yet, Jackson took his duty as a Christian man seriously with his students and the black population of Lexington, Virginia. He began every lecture with a prayer in the hope that his students would be encouraged by the word of God, and he led Sunday school classes for the black population, both free and slave, of Lexington.

Jackson owned no more than six slaves as an adult. Four were given as a wedding gift, and two requested that he purchase them so they could work for a man of Jackson's kind temperament. He honored their request. One of his slaves was a young girl with a learning disability given to his wife as a gift. Like Lee, Jackson never made any statements in support of slavery. He was typical of many Southerners in his belief that slavery was ordained by God, that slaves had been given that burden by the hand of God, and that as a Christian man he was required to be a kind master. His pastor described his relationship to the black population of Lexington as thus: "In their religious instruction he succeeded wonderfully. His discipline was systematic and firm, but very kind. ... His servants revered and loved him, as they would have done a brother or father. ... He was emphatically the black man's friend." Jackson either freed his slaves or hired them out during the War Between the States.

Jackson was not a secessionist. He remained relatively neutral in the events leading to the "Secession Winter" of 1860 and 1861, but like Lee, once Virginia determined to leave the Union, he supported the cause with a vigor virtually unmatched by anyone south of the Mason-Dixon. He preferred waging an aggressive, punishing war on the North, of taking the bayonet to the enemy in the enemy's territory, but though his strategic assessment of the military situation in 1861 was probably correct and may have won the South the War, he was overruled by the more conservative members of the military brain-trust,

most importantly President Jefferson Davis. The War, they argued, had to be a just, defensive cause to preserve the South. Lee shared Jackson's advocacy of an offensive war, but differed in the scope of such a conflict. The two men, however, would serve as the perfect one-two punch during the early years of the War Between the States. Jackson was the ideal complement to Lee's selectively aggressive style.

"Stonewall" Jackson earned his famous nickname during the first major engagement of the War, the First Battle of Manassas. His early efforts during the War involved organizing and training several companies of Virginia volunteers in the Shenandoah Valley. "Stonewall's Brigade" as they would be called was perhaps the best trained and disciplined group of men in the Southern army. They were also affectionately referred to as the "foot cavalry" for their ability, at their commander's firm insistence, to ignore pain, suffering, and sickness in their long, quick marches against the enemy. These men saved the day at Manassas in July 1861 by standing firm against a punishing Union assault on Henry House Hill. General Bernard Bee of South Carolina said after seeing Jackson and his men holding the line in the face of the onrushing Union army, "There is Jackson standing like a stone wall. Let us determine to die here and we will conquer. Rally behind the Virginians!" There is some debate as to whether Bee, soon killed in combat, was leveling praise or scorn on Jackson. Either way, the nickname stuck.

This was typical Jackson. The lead was flying, the situation tense, and Jackson steadily and bravely stared down the enemy. Because of Jackson and his men, what looked to be an early Union victory turned into a Confederate rout, and a legend was born. Jackson was once asked how he could stand so calm in the face of battle. He responded that his belief in God, his firm Christianity, made him as safe on the battlefield as in his bed. His death was not his choosing and he was as prepared for it in peace as he was in war.

Jackson's fame only grew. With fewer men (often outnumbered 4 to 1), he punished and tied up the Union army in the Shenandoah Valley, a campaign that is still studied in West Point today. His penchant for relentless attack struck fear into the hearts of the Union command. At one point, a large detachment of Union men evacuated a town on the mere suspicion that Jackson was going to attack. He was, but his men were probably too sick and tired to fight. Such is the benefit of a disorienting, hard hitting approach to battle. No one knew where Jackson was, and no one could expect what he would do next. His unconventional approach to warfare was pure military genius. Jackson understood human nature better than most, particularly during what Karl von Clausewitz called the "fog of war." Most men did not share his calmness in the face of fire and would shrink when the action was too hot. Jackson always turned up the heat.

His most brilliant strategic plan would ultimately be his last. Jackson orchestrated the Confederate attack at Chancellorsville in 1863. He persuaded Lee to split his army, sending Jackson's corps to assault the Union right flank while Lee held them off at Fredericksburg. It was a risky maneuver, for they were outnumbered two-to-one, but with expert reconnaissance, Jackson formed a surprise attack that pushed the Union right flank back against the Rappahannock River in classic double envelopment. His quick strike led to fluid lines as the Union troops were running from the Confederate assault. Jackson, in the twilight, was scouting his forward position when the 18th North Carolina Infantry confused him and his staff for a Union detachment. They fired, striking Jackson three times. His left arm was amputated, but it was pneumonia that took Jackson's life one week later.

He was mindful of his situation until the end, saying he always wanted to die on a Sunday. God granted him his wish. His last words, “Let us cross over the river and rest in the shade of the trees,” were a fitting end to Jackson’s life. He had found peace in war. The Confederate cause, however, would never be the same. Lee struggled to replace Jackson’s aggressive tactics and claimed later in life that had Jackson had been alive during the Battle of Gettysburg, the outcome would have been different, and the South would have won her independence. Fate intervened. The historian James Robertson called Jackson “a man of arms surrounded by faith,” and said Jackson’s biography was “the life story of an extraordinary man who became a general.” He was more than a master military mind. Jackson, as one of his former students said, was “a soldier of the cross.”

## About Brion McClanahan

Brion McClanahan is the editor of *The Abbeville Review* and is the author or co-author of four books, *The Politically Incorrect Guide to the Founding Fathers*, (Regnery, 2009), *The Founding Fathers Guide to the Constitution* (Regnery History, 2012), *Forgotten Conservatives in American History* (Pelican, 2012), and *The Politically Incorrect Guide to Real American Heroes*, (Regnery, 2012). He received a B.A. in History from Salisbury University in 1997 and an M.A. in History from the University of South Carolina in 1999. He finished his Ph.D. in History at the University of South Carolina in 2006, and had the privilege of being Clyde Wilson’s last doctoral student. He lives in Alabama with his wife and three daughters. **More from Brion McClanahan**

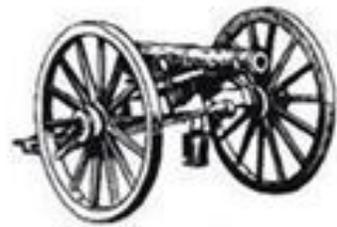
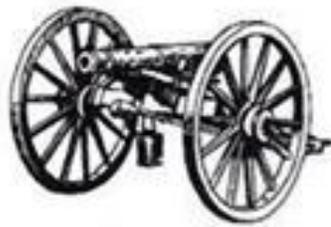




# The Battle of Arcadia Crossroads



February 13-15, 2015, Arcadia, LA  
located at Bonnie & Clyde Trade Days



The Battle of Arcadia Crossroads will be a full Civil War reenactment with a battle featuring infantry and live firing cannons Saturday and Sunday at 2 p.m.

Throughout both days, spectators will have the opportunity not only to see the reenactment between the Blue & the Gray but also infantry drills, artillery/cannon demonstrations, Ladies Socials, Soldiers' camp life and a "Sweetheart" Dance featuring live music of the period later on Saturday night.

Bonnie & Clyde Trade Days site offers RV camping. Participating reenacting units will have access to the usual amenities such as firewood and hay, but also access to public restrooms, showers and running water.

**Location:**

Bonnie & Clyde Trade Days in Arcadia, LA.  
Directions from I-20: Take Exit 69 & follow the signs south for approx. three 1/2 miles.

**Date/Time Information:**

February 13-15, 2015. School Day, Friday  
February 13th, 8am-3pm. Battles are 2 p.m.  
Saturday and Sunday with the event concluding at 4 p.m. on Sunday.

**Contact Information:**

Contact Email: [scvbobwhite@gmail.com](mailto:scvbobwhite@gmail.com)  
[sonsofconfederateveterans54@yahoo.com](mailto:sonsofconfederateveterans54@yahoo.com)  
Contact Phone: 318-422-5754, 318-348-6873

More information can be found here:  
[www.facebook.com/BattleofArcadiaCrossroads](http://www.facebook.com/BattleofArcadiaCrossroads)  
[www.bonnieandclydetradedays.com](http://www.bonnieandclydetradedays.com)

**Fees/Admission:**

\$3 parking



# Bill to move Robert E. Lee Day does not pass



THV 11 Staff, news source 6:32 p.m. CST January 28, 2015

Click [HERE](#) to view news report.

LITTLE ROCK, Ark. (KTHV) – On Wednesday, legislators struck down Bill 1113, a proposal to move Robert E. Lee Day from Dr. Martin Luther King Day to Nov. 30.

In a packed room, nearly 10 people spoke out against the bill citing heritage, culture and honor as reasons to keep things the way they are.

On the same note, only two members of the public spoke in support of the bill, one of them being Little Rock resident Kelly Duda.

"I don't believe Robert E. Lee, a traitor to his country who fought for enslavement of others, should have a holiday. This is Arkansas. We're part of the United States of America, not part of the Confederacy," Duda said in an interview.

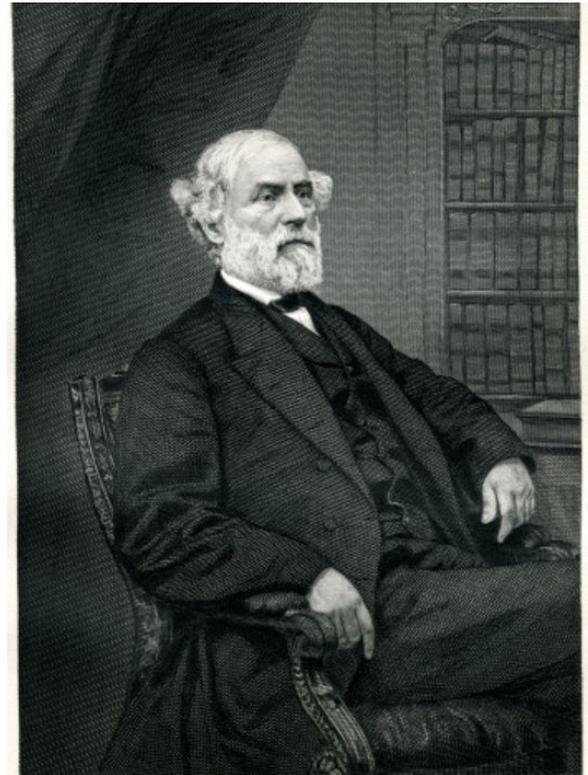
Lee has been celebrated in Arkansas since 1943, before the day became legally recognized as a state holiday in 1947.

"It's got nothing to do with slavery. It's honoring and honorable man," said Robert Edwards who showed up to oppose the bill.

Edwards is the Arkansas Division Commander of the Sons of Confederate Veterans, a group who came in numbers to Wednesday's hearing.

"We've got more important things to worry about than what is a state holiday," he continued.

Arkansas remains one of only three states- Arkansas, Mississippi, and Alabama- that recognizes the two men on the same day and one of only six that honors Lee altogether.

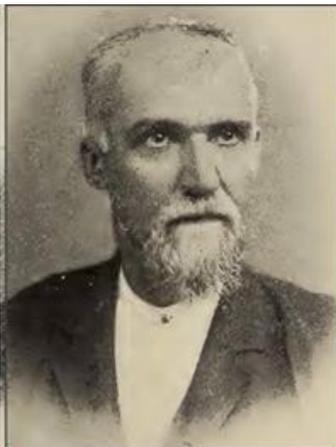


(Photo: traveler1116, Getty Images)

The bill proposed would still recognize Lee, but on Nov. 30 as part of Patrick Cleburn-Robert E. Lee Southern Heritage Day.

"What do we mean by Southern heritage?" Duda added. "I mean if it's Cleburn-Robert E. Lee Southern Heritage Day, it almost sounds like white pride day to me."

<http://www.thv11.com/story/news/politics/2015/01/28/bill-to-move-robert-e-lee-day-does-not-pass/22468235/>



**General  
Elwood M. Beane**

*"GENERAL E. M. BEANE was born in Washington county, Md., January 5, 1839. He came to Texas in 1857 and settled in Milam county. In 1859 he was on the frontiers of Texas in the company commanded by General L. S. Ross. He enlisted in the Confederate service in the first company that went out from Milam county, which was commanded by Captain J. C. Rogers and was a part of Hood's brigade. He was in all the battles participated in by Hood's brigade up to the battle of Gettysburg, wdiere he lost his right arm and was captured. He was a prisoner about ten months, for a while at Baltimore, a while at Fort McHenry and a while at Point Look Out, at which place he was exchanged. After he was exchanged he was placed in the invalid's corps and ordered to report to General E. Kirby Smith, but organized a battery of the reserve corps commanded by General J. B. Robertson."*

**William Bledsoe Philpott, The Sponsor Souvenir Album And History Of The United Confederate Veterans' Reunion (Houston: Sponsor Souvenir Company, 1895), 132.**



### Defending the Heritage

They like to talk about Andersonville but, the fact is mortality rates were higher in Federal Hell Holes like Alton and Camp Douglas Illinois.

The penitentiary in Alton was completed in 1833 and was used to house criminals from Illinois. The prison was built in the style of a fortress made of stone with walls 30 feet high. In the beginning it had only 24 cells, but eventually was expanded to have 256 cells, each about 4 feet by 7 feet in size. Often there would be three men in each cell. The prison was overcrowded, and the prisoners endured horrible conditions, working all day and being secluded at night. The prison conditions were so bad that Dorthea Dix, a reformer and activist of the mid-1800's, finally was successful in having the prison closed but it was reopened to house Confederate prisoners.

Immediately it was over-crowded and conditions were deplorable. There was no running water, totally unsanitary conditions, no facilities for bathing, little food or clothing, little effective medical care, and especially harsh treatment of the prisoners. Over the next three and a-half years, more than 12,000 Confederates and a couple of hundred Federal soldiers, as well as several hundred civilians, including a number of ladies, would be prisoners in the Alton prison. The prison which was originally determined to be able to adequately hold 800 inmates often had more than 1900 prisoners during the war. Citizens, including several women, were imprisoned here for treasonable actions, making anti-Union statements, aiding an escaped Confederate, etc. Others, classified as bushwhackers or guerillas, were imprisoned for acts against the government such as bridge burning and railroad vandalism.

Conditions in the prison were harsh and the mortality rate was above average for a Union Prison, some estimates are as high at 23 percent. Hot, humid summers, and cold Midwestern winters took a heavy toll on the prisoners already weakened by poor nourishment and inadequate clothing. Overcrowding was the rule of the day. Pneumonia and dysentery were common killers but contagious diseases such as smallpox and rubella were the most feared. When smallpox infection became alarmingly high in the winter of 1862, a quarantine hospital was located on an island in the middle of the Mississippi River.

~Robert Mestas~

Photo: Camp Douglas Chicago, AKA 80 acres of Hell!

# **R. E. Lee: A Biography**

## **by Douglas Southall Freeman**

published by Charles Scribner's Sons,  
New York and London, 1934

### **Chapter I**

#### **A CARRIAGE GOES TO ALEXANDRIA**

They had come so often, those sombre men from the sheriff. Always they were polite and always they seemed embarrassed, but they asked so insistently of the General's whereabouts and they talked of court papers with strange Latin names. Sometimes they lingered about as if they believed Henry Lee were in hiding, and more than once they had tried to force their way into the house. That was why Ann Carter Lee's husband had placed those chains there on the doors in the great hall at Stratford. The horses had been taken, the furniture had been "attached" — whatever that meant — and tract after tract had been sold off to cancel obligations. Faithful friends still visited, of course, and whenever the General rode to Montross or to Fredericksburg the old soldiers saluted him and told their children that he was "Light-Horse Harry" Lee, but she knew that people whispered that he had twice been in jail because he could not pay his debts. Of course, he wanted to pay, but how could he? She could not help him, because her father had put her inheritance in trust. Robert Morris, poor man, had died without returning a penny of the \$40,000 he owed Mr. Lee, and that fine plan for building a town at the Great Falls of the Potomac had never been carried out, because they could not settle the quitrents. If General Lee had been able to do that or to get the money on that claim he had bought in east, all would be well. As it was, they could not go on there at Stratford, where the house was falling to pieces and everything was in confusion. Besides, Stratford was not theirs. Matilda Lee had owned it and she had left it to young Henry and he was now of age. So, the only thing to do was to leave and go to Alexandria, where they could live in a simple home and send Charles Carter to the free school and find a doctor for the baby that was to come in February.

That was why they had Smith and three-year-old Robert in the p2carriage, with their few belongings, and were driving away from the ancestral home of the Lees. Perhaps it was well that Robert was so young: he would have no memories of those hard, wretched years that had passed since the General had started speculating — would not know, perhaps, that the long drive up the Northern Neck, that summer day in 1810, marked the dénouement in the life drama of his brilliant, lovable, and unfortunate father.

Fairer prospects than those of Henry Lee in 1781 no young American revolutionary had. Born in 1756, at Leesylvania, Prince William County, Va., he was the eldest son of Henry Lee and his wife, Lucy Grymes. From boyhood he had the high intelligence of his father's distinguished forebears and the physical charm of his beautiful mother. He won a great name at Princeton, where he had been graduated in 1773. But for the coming of the war he would have gone to England to study law. Instead, before he was twenty-one, he entered the army as a captain in the cavalry regiment commanded by his kinsman, Theodoric Bland. Behind him had been all the influence of a family which included at that time three of the outstanding men of the Revolution, his cousins Richard Henry Lee, Arthur Lee, and William Lee.

His achievements thereafter were in keeping with his opportunities, for he seemed, as General Charles Lee put it, "to have come out of his mother's womb a soldier." A vigorous man, five feet nine inches in height, he had strength and endurance for most arduous of Washington's campaigns. He made himself the talk of the army by beating off a surprise attack at Spread Eagle Tavern in January, 1778. Offered a post as aide to Washington, he was promoted major when he expressed a preference for field service; he stormed Paulus Hook on the lower Hudson with so much skill and valor that Washington praised him in unstinted terms and Congress voted him thanks and a medal; he was privileged to address his dispatches directly and privately to Washington, whose admiring confidence he possessed; he was given a mixed command of infantry and cavalry which was officially designated as Lee's partisan corps; when he wearied of inaction in the North he was transferred to the Southern department in October, 1780, with the rank of lieutenant colonel. Although he was just twenty-five when he joined General Nathanael Greene in January, 1781, "Light-Horse Harry" Lee was already one of the most renowned of American soldiers.



MAJOR GENERAL HENRY ("LIGHT HORSE HARRY") LEE,  
FATHER OF GENERAL R. E. LEE

No well-authenticated portrait of the mother of Robert Edward Lee is known to be in existence, although what is believed by some to be a painting of her was found in Rome several years ago.

*After a painting by Peale.<sup>9</sup>*

With not more than 280 men, Lee took the field in the Carolinas. The stalwart, dependable Greene was friendly and ready to take counsel. His theatre of operations was wide, the British posts were scattered. Surprises and forays invited the adventuresome commander. Marion and Sumter were worthy rivals. In Wade Hampton and Peter Johnston, father of [Joseph E. Johnston](#), Lee found loyal comrades. Dazzling months opened before him. He was in the raid of Georgetown and won new honors at Guilford Courthouse. At least as much as any other officer, he was responsible for the decision of General Greene to abandon the march after Cornwallis and to turn southward instead, a decision that changed the whole course of the war in that area and brought about the liberation of Georgia and the Carolinas. Rejoining Marion on April 14, 1781, Lee co-operated with him in capturing [Fort Watson](#) and [Fort Motte](#), and then advanced with only his own command to Fort Granby, which he bluffed into surrender, though not without starting some murmurs that he allowed overgenerous terms in order that he might receive the

capitulation before the arrival of General Sumter. From Fort Granby, Lee swung again to the south. Marching more than seventy-five miles in three days, he reduced Fort Galphin, and had a large part in the capture of Fort Cornwallis at Augusta. His was the most spectacular part in the most successful campaign the American army fought, and his reputation rose accordingly. In the remaining operations of the year he was less successful, though he had the good fortune to be sent with dispatches from Greene to Washington in time to witness the surrender of Cornwallis at Yorktown.

Then something happened to Lee. In a strange change of mental outlook, the tragedy of his life began. As soon as the fighting was over he became sensitive, resentful, and imperious. He felt that Greene had slighted him, and that his brother officers were envious and hostile. A curious conflict took place in his mind between two obscure impulses. One apparently was a desire to be master of himself and to remain in the profession for which he seems to have known he was best fitted. The other impulse was to quit the camps of contention for the quiet of civil life, there to win riches and the eminence he felt had been unjustly denied him in the army.

This inward battle may have had its origin in the restlessness of a soldier whose campaigning was over. Exhaustion and ill-health may have caused a temporary warp of mind. Resentment may have been at the bottom of it, the resentment that is so easily aroused in the heart of a young man whom praise has spoiled. More particularly, a love-affair then developing doubtless made Henry Lee discontented with his life. The mental conflict, in any case, was one that Lee felt himself unable to win by the exercise of will or of judgment, though he looked upon it as objectively as if it had been the struggle of another man. "I wish from motives of self," he wrote General Greene, "to make my way easy and comfortable. This, if ever attainable, is to be got only in an obscure retreat." And again: "I am candid to acknowledge my imbecility of mind, and hope time and absence may alter my feelings. At present, my fervent wish is, for the most hidden obscurity; I want not private or public applause. My happiness will depend on myself; and if I have but fortitude to persevere in my intention, it will not be in the power of malice, outrage or envy to affect me. Heaven knows the issue. I wish I could bend my mind to other decisions. I have tried much, but the sores of my wounds are only irritated afresh by my efforts."

In this spirit Henry Lee debated — and chose wrongly. Early in 1782 he resigned from the army. He took with him Greene's acknowledgment that he was "more indebted to this officer than to any other for the advantages gained over the enemy, in the operations of the last campaign,"<sup>5</sup> but he left behind him the one vocation that ever held his sustained interest.

For a while all appeared to go well with him. He seemed to make his way "easy and comfortable," as he had planned, by a prompt marriage with his cousin, Matilda Lee, who had been left mistress of the great estate of Stratford, on the Potomac, by the death of her father, Philip Ludwell Lee, eldest of the famous, brilliant sons of Thomas Lee. Their marriage was a happy one, and within five years, four children were born. Two of them survived the ills of early life, the daughter, Lucy Grymes, and the third son, Henry Lee, fourth of that name.<sup>6</sup>

Following the custom of his family, Henry Lee became a candidate in 1785 for the house of delegates of Virginia. He was duly chosen and was promptly named by his colleagues to the Continental Congress, which he entered under the favorable introduction of his powerful kinsman, Richard Henry Lee. In that office he continued, with one interruption and sundry leaves of absence, almost until the dissolution of the Congress of the Confederation.<sup>7</sup> To the ratification of the new Constitution he gave his warmest support as spokesman for Westmoreland in the Virginia convention of 1788, where he challenged the thunders of Patrick Henry, leader of the opposition. Quick to urge Washington to accept the presidency, he it was who composed the farewell address on behalf of his neighbors when Washington started to New York to be inaugurated.<sup>8</sup> The next year Lee was again a member of the house of delegates, and in 1791 he was chosen Governor of Virginia, which honorific position he held for three terms of one year each. Laws were passed during his administration for reorganizing the militia, for reforming the courts, and for adjusting the state's public policy in many ways. Some dreams of improved internal navigation were cherished but could not be attained.<sup>9</sup>

In the achievements of these years Lee was distinguished but not zealous. His public service was all too plainly the by-product of a mind preoccupied. For the chief weakness of his character now showed itself, and the curious impulse with which he had battled before he resigned from the army took form in a wild mania for speculation. No dealer he in idle farm lands, no petty gambler in crossroads ordinaries. His every scheme was grandiose, and his profits ran to millions in his mind.

He plunged deeply, and always unprofitably. Financially distressed as early as 1783-85, he put £8000 of hard money into some magnificent and foolish venture in the Mississippi country.<sup>10</sup> Losing there, he sought to recoup by purchasing 500 acres of land at the Great Falls of the Potomac, where he hoped to sell off innumerable lots to those who were to build a great city at the turning-basins of the canal. This project must have had real possibilities, for it won Washington's approval and it interested James Madison. Despite an attempt to finance it in Europe, the enterprise fell through.<sup>11</sup> Before Lee had abandoned all hope of succeeding with this scheme, he had pondered the possibilities of

getting inside information on the financial plans of the new Federal Government, presumably in order that he might buy up the old currency and make a fortune by exchanging it for the new issues. In November, 1789, he presumed on his friendship with Alexander Hamilton to attempt to procure from the Secretary of the Treasury a confidential statement of the administration's policy. Hamilton affectionately but firmly refused to tell him anything, whereupon this, also, had to be added to Henry Lee's futile dreams.<sup>4</sup> A little later Lee was involved in transactions that prompted Washington to declare downrightly that Lee had not paid him what was due.<sup>4</sup>

By this time, though there never was anything vicious in his character or dishonest in his purposes, Henry Lee had impaired his reputation as a man of business and was beginning to draw heavy drafts on the confidence of his friends. His own father, who died in 1789, passed over him in choosing an executor, while leaving him large landed property.<sup>5</sup> Matilda Lee who had been in bad health since 1788, put her estate in trust for her children in 1790, probably to protect their rights against her husband's creditors. Soon afterwards she died, followed quickly by her oldest son, Philip Ludwell Lee, a lad of about seven.

Desperate in his grief, and conscious at last that he had made the wrong decision when he had left the army, Lee now wanted to return to a military life. He sought to get command of the forces that were to be sent to the Northwest to redeem the Saint Clair disaster. When he was passed over for reasons that he did not understand, he was more than disappointed. "It is better," he wrote Madison, "to till the soil with your own hands than to serve a government which distrusts your due attachment — even in the higher stations."<sup>6</sup> For a time, he became antagonistic to the fiscal policy of his old commander and was sympathetic with the bitterest foe of the Federalists in the American press, Philip Freneau. He might formally have gone over to the opposition had he not been rebuffed when he made overtures to Jefferson, who seems instinctively to have distrusted him.<sup>7</sup>

If he could not wear again the uniform of his own country there was an alternative, to which Lee turned in the wildest of all his dreams. He was head of an American state, but he would resign, go to France and get a commission in the army of the revolutionaries! First inquiries led him to believe he would be accepted and be given the rank of major-general, but he had some misgivings about the ability of the French to victual and maintain their troops. Before setting out for Paris he decided to take counsel with Washington. "Bred to arms," he confided to his old commander, then President, "I have always since my domestic calamity wished for a return to my profession, as the best resort for my mind in its affliction." Washington, of course, warned him to stay away from a conflict that was leading to chaos. The veteran diplomatist, William Lee, his cousin, volunteered like counsel.<sup>8</sup>

Despite his reverence for Washington, Henry Lee might have placed his sword at the disposal of the French terrorists had not his mind been turned to a softer subject: Like many another widower he found consolation for a lost love in a new. Visiting Shirley, the James River plantation of Charles Carter, who was then probably the richest man in Virginia except George Washington, he became attached to Ann Hill Carter, then twenty, Charles Carter's daughter by his second wife, Anne Moore.<sup>9</sup> Lee was seventeen years her senior but he must have appealed to her from the first. Was he not a Revolutionary hero, a gentleman of impeccable manners and flashing conversation, and was he not Governor of Virginia withal? Besides, there was the romance of his chivalrous purpose to offer his sword to republican France, the distressed land of his comrade Lafayette.

Charles Carter did not look at Lee through his daughter's eyes. As a father and a man of affairs, he would not permit Ann to marry a Virginian foolish enough to throw in his lot with the madmen of Paris. There were parleys and exchanges that ended finally in Lee's decision to abandon his French adventure. Carter at once softened and gave his consent to a union which he was considerate enough to say he had opposed on no other grounds. So, on June 30, 1793, when Robespierre was filling the tumbrels with the victims of the law of 22d Prairial, the two were joined in the marriage of which Robert E. Lee was born.<sup>10</sup>

For a time after his second marriage, Henry Lee seemed to be stabilized. Returning to his former political support of his adored Washington, he received the confidences of the President in the delicate matter of French neutrality, and he supported the executive in a much-applauded proclamation.<sup>23</sup> When the "Whiskey Boys' Rebellion" broke out the next year he forgot his former grievance and gladly led the expedition sent to crush the rising, though his absence almost cost him his office as governor.<sup>24</sup> Meantime, he became vehemently critical of Jefferson.<sup>25</sup>

Retiring, as was then customary in Virginia, on the expiration of his third term as governor, Lee was enough in the public eye to be mentioned as a possible successor to Washington.<sup>26</sup> Instead of climbing onward to that office, however, all that remained to him were a few years of service in the general assembly, a temporary commission as major-general at the time of the threatened war with France, and a single term in Congress, where he eulogized his dead chieftain, as "first in war, first in peace, and first in the hearts of his countrymen."<sup>27</sup> Thereafter he held no political office of importance and probably could have gained none.

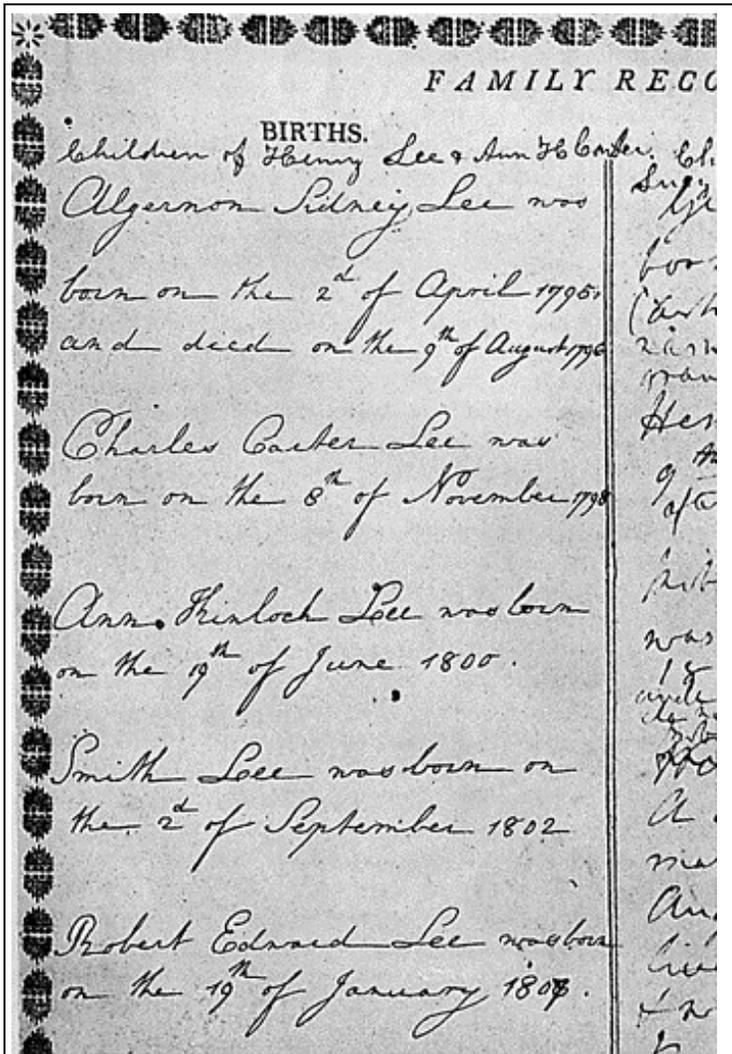
The reason was that his old passion for wild speculation returned. Already it had entailed grief, loss, and the estrangement of friends. Now, everything was subordinated to his desperate efforts to make a fortune — his peace of mind, his family's comfort, his standing in the eyes of old comrades. His own son, Henry, who idolized his father, had to write of him: "He entered into a course of sanguine and visionary speculations, endeavoring to acquire wealth, not by rational and productive industry, but by a combination of bargains which could hardly benefit one party without injury to the other, and which were often mutually detrimental. To the task of making one yield what others failed to return, he devoted no little of misapplied talent and activity — in bearing the weight of distress and ruin which they finally entailed, he wasted a degree of fortitude which, however inglorious the struggle, could not be witnessed without admiration."<sup>28</sup>

Lee became involved with the Marshalls in the purchase of a part of the vast Fairfax estates in the Northern Neck and endeavored to finance it through Robert Morris, but, in the end, advanced Morris \$40,000, which the old Philadelphian could not repay. Next Lee, it would seem, was entrusted by some of his friends with the sale of Western lands in 1797. In expectation of early payment, certain of these men made loans or assumed obligations they were unable to meet when the settlement was delayed. Lee worked feverishly to raise the funds through his attorney and agent, William Sullivan of Boston. He was harassed "by those distressed individuals who are all about me now," as he wrote Sullivan, and he had the humiliation of having one of his creditors, "poor Glassel," thrown into jail, presumably for debt.<sup>29</sup>

Undeterred, he was lured by the mysterious Western adventure of Aaron Burr, for whom he voted in 1801. He was not in Burr's counsel, but his interest in the attempt to create a new empire was so great that it was reported he had left Staunton, Va., to join Burr.<sup>30</sup> It was at this stage of his speculative mania, when he was dreaming of a fortune that was to be won by the conquest of a new frontier, that his son Robert was conceived. At the time when the expectancy of the mother kept Henry Lee at home, in January, 1807, he was busy on a scheme to wipe out all his debts and to enjoy affluence once more by prevailing upon the British Lord Chancellor to order a final distribution of an estate which had been contested for sixty years. Lee had no claim to the property through kinship, but he and two others had bought up certain claims to it as a speculation. The

letter that bears a closer date to that of Robert's birth than any of Henry Lee's extant correspondence is one in which he asked the help of James Monroe, then minister to England, in this chimerical enterprise.<sup>31</sup>

Ann Lee's pregnancy was not happy. Too many shadows hung over it. During the early years at Stratford, though her husband had forever been spurring restlessly about, she had been content. In the year when Henry Lee had been thundering against the Virginia resolutions, she had written the wife of her brother-in-law: "I do not find [my life] in the slightest degree tiresome: my hours pass too nimbly away. When in company, if agreeable company, I greatly enjoy it: when alone my husband and Child excepted, I am not sensible of the want of society. In them I have enough to make me



ENTRY OF THE BIRTH OF ROBERT EDWARD LEE,  
 AUTOGRAPH OF ANN HILL CARTER LEE, IN THE FAMILY BIBLE  
 Now in the possession of Robert R. Lee, son of R. E. Lee's oldest brother,  
 Charles Carter Lee.

cheerful and happy." She had then been from home for only one night in seven months.\* But sickness after 1800 had brought suffering and many weeks of invalidism.\* Henry Lee had been more and more frequently absent for long periods; the pinch of poverty had taken from her the comforts she had known in girlhood; she had lost even her carriage;\* life had grown gray on the narrowed, untilled acres of Stratford. While the child was in her womb, she had gone to Shirley after the death of her father and had found it a house of mourning.\* On her return home at the end of December, 1806, she had been forced to ride in an open carriage and had caught a cold from which she was suffering as the time for the delivery of her child approached. Eight days before the pains of labor came upon her she wrote Mrs. Richard Bland Lee, who also was *enceinte*, "You have my best wishes for your success[,] my dear, and *truest assurances*, that I do not envy your prospects nor wish to *share in them*."\*

On January 19, 1807, Ann Carter Lee's fourth child was born, an unblemished boy, who was named Robert Edward, after two of his mother's brothers, Robert and Edward Carter. His first cry was in the east chamber on the main floor of the old house,\* the room nearest the garden, the very chamber in which, according to tradition, Richard Henry and Francis Lightfoot Lee, signers of the Declaration of Independence, had seen the light.

When Robert was sixteen months old, his half-brother Henry passed out of his minority and came into

possession of Stratford. After that "Light-Horse Harry" and his family by his second marriage could only remain on the estate as the guests of the young master. With this prospect before him and his financial plight daily worse, the old soldier could see no alternative to beating a retreat. He must leave the country, if he could, and find shelter in some foreign land, where his creditors could not pursue him. Contemplating this, and presenting Mrs. Lee's ill-health as a reason, he solicited a government appointment to Brazil or to the West Indies.\*

For the time, it was all to no purpose. There were no vacancies to be filled, and no new appointments to be made. Credit was gone, reputation was almost gone, civil judgments against him multiplied with the months. During the spring of 1809, when Robert was receiving his first impressions of Stratford as a place of beauty

and of glory, his father came to the last humiliation: Odds and ends of real estate that had been left to him after nearly thirty years of wild trading had to be deeded away. Of everything that could be sold, he was stripped bare. And even this did not save him. On April 11, 1809, he was arrested for a debt of some 5400 Spanish dollars, with accrued interest for nearly seven years, and was confined to jail at the county seat of Westmoreland. Later in the year he was imprisoned for the same reason in Spotsylvania. Not until the spring of 1810 was he at liberty, and then he had nothing left him except

some lands he could not market.<sup>24</sup> While incarcerated, he had written a large part of his *Memoirs of the War in the Southern Department of the United States*. With a shadow of his old optimism, he flattered himself this book would enjoy a great run;<sup>25</sup> but that, of course, was almost as much a gamble as any of those on which he had lost his fortune.

At home again, writing furiously on his book, but with no immediate income, he decided on the move to Alexandria. Henry was twenty-four and could not be expected to supply food and shelter indefinitely. There was no money with which to employ a tutor for the three children, who were now requiring instruction. Everything left to Mrs. Lee and her young brood was the return from a trust that had been set up for her benefit under the will of her father. When the estate was settled, the revenue from this fund, which Henry Lee could not dissipate, would provide shelter, food, and clothing but nothing besides.

The little caravan from Stratford ended its journey at a small, but trim and comfortable brick house on Cameron Street in Alexandria, close to the Episcopal church. Life was easier there than in the sprawling Stratford mansion, but cares increased. During the winter, after the family settled in town, the new baby, a girl, was born to the burdened mother.<sup>26</sup> There were now five children, ranging from the new-born infant to a boy of thirteen, and one of the quintet, Ann, was sickly. Before the infant had ceased to be an hourly charge, and when Robert was five and a half, the final blow came.

Henry Lee's strong Federalism had led him to oppose a second war with Great Britain. Seeing no grievance that he did not believe could be corrected in amity, he had written repeatedly to Madison, over a period of five years, in the interest of peace.<sup>27</sup> When hostilities opened in June, 1812, Lee was unreconciled to the conflict and quick to sympathize with those who became the victims of war's passions. Among these sufferers was the young editor of *The Baltimore Federal Republican*, Alexander C. Hanson, whose plant, press and building were wrecked by a mob which an antiwar editorial in his paper had inflamed. Hanson was no coward, and though he left Baltimore temporarily and came to Georgetown, not far up the Potomac from Alexandria, he determined to return to the city and to resume the circulation of his journal.

Hearing some whisper of Hanson's plan, Lee was aroused. On July 20, he wrote the editor how to conduct a defense in a barricaded house, though he advised him to call on the authorities for assistance and not to provoke the mob again. Lee apparently was not privy to Hanson's movements, but he either had business in Baltimore about the time of the expected return of the editor, or else he made business an excuse for going there to see what befell the courageous critic of Madison's war policy.

On July 27, 1812, Hanson issued in Baltimore a paper which had been printed in Georgetown. Henry Lee had paid two visits to Hanson after he had reached Baltimore, and when he observed the sensation created by the paper, he hastened to him again. He found the editor and a few friends assembled in a house that Hanson was using as a combined office and residence. Soon after Lee arrived, idlers in the street were swollen into a wrathful mob that threatened an assault. As an experienced soldier, Lee was asked to assist in protecting the premises. Undertaking this task with his war-time alacrity, he sent out for additional arms, barricaded the place, and disposed the little garrison. Firing soon broke out. One man was killed in the street and another was wounded. Maddened by these casualties, the mob would doubtless have attacked the building and would have slain the volunteer garrison then and there, had not the militia arrived and taken position in the street.

After a night of excitement, negotiations were opened between the troops and the friends of Hanson. Finally the twenty-three occupants of the house submitted themselves to the officers of the law, who escorted them to a large cell in the jail as the safest place in which they could remain until the passions of the hour had cooled. But the rioters were not so easily shaken off. All day of the 28th, the mob spirit spread through the town. After nightfall, a crowd of armed men gathered before the jail, intent on murder. Through negligence or connivance, the troops were not called out again. The jailer was helpless. An entrance was soon forced. The hallway was immediately packed with wild ruffians. Death

seemed so certain that Lee proposed to his companions that they should take the few weapons they had and shoot one another rather than let themselves be torn to pieces by the mob. But better judgment prevailed, and when the door of the cell was beaten down, the defenders made a sally. Instantly there was a confused mêlée. When it was over, half of Hanson's friends had escaped, but one of them had been killed and eleven others had been frightfully beaten. Eight were thought to be dead and were piled together in front of the building, where they were subjected to continued mutilation.

Henry Lee was among this number. Drunken brutes thrust penknives into his flesh, and waited to see whether there was a flicker when hot candle grease was poured into his eyes. One fiend tried to cut off his nose. After a while, by asserting that they merely wished to give him decent burial, some of the town physicians succeeded in carrying him to a hospital. His condition was so desperate that his death was reported in Washington, but his great physical strength sufficed to keep him alive, and good nursing made it possible for him to return home later in the summer. But he was weak, crippled, and disfigured, doomed to invalidism for the remaining six years of his life, wholly dependent on the income of his wife, and of course incapable of accepting the military command that would almost certainly have been given him when the first tide of the war in Canada turned against the United States.<sup>4</sup>

Hope was dead now in the heart of Henry Lee. He dreamed no more of the fortune that was to be made in his very next venture. His one ambition was to leave the country, both for his health and for his peace of mind. In pressing for the means of escape, he did not even attempt to conceal his poverty. "As to my change of clime," he wrote Monroe, "without money, as I am, it will be difficult to execute my object even with your promised aid."<sup>5</sup> It was doubly difficult because Lee wished to go to a British island, inasmuch as he spoke neither French nor Spanish. The consent of the British admiral had to be procured if he was to pass the blockading squadrons and land unhindered. But Monroe was as good as his word, and after some months he arranged for Lee to go to the Barbadoes.

So, one day in the early summer of 1813,<sup>6</sup> Robert must have shed tears with the rest, as he shared the final embraces of his father. Behind him, in his own household, "Light-Horse Harry" left only sorrow. For, with all his financial follies, he had never lost the respect, much less the affection, of his family. Fully conscious of his failings, which they pitied, they still were awed by his dignity and fascinated by his conversation. On the youthful mind of Robert, his father's vices made no impress, but always in his memory the picture of his sire was glamorous with charm.

But Henry Lee could not have been greatly comforted, as he went down the Potomac, by the knowledge that he was still king of his fireside. He had received Congress's medal and had enjoyed p17the *entrée* to the commander-in-chief; his name had been on every patriot's tongue; he had told General Greene that he wished to put himself where it would not be "in the power of malice, outrage or envy" to affect him. And now he was sailing away from the state he had governed, from the creditors he could never pay, from a family he might not see again, and he knew he was passing over the gray horizon of failure.

---

## The Author's Notes:

<sup>1</sup> The whole course of Henry Lee's speculations and financial distresses is traced in Thomas Boyd: *Light Horse Harry Lee* (cited hereafter as *Boyd*), 180 ff., 277 ff.

<sup>2</sup> *National Portrait Gallery*, vol. 3.

<sup>3</sup> For the dates of Lee's commissions and for the augmentation of his command, see *Congressional Directory, 1774-1911*, p801, *Washington Papers*, 597; E. J. Lee, *Lee of Virginia* (cited hereafter as *E. J. Lee*), 331-32; 8 *Ford's Washington*, 489; H. Lee, *Campaign of 1781 in the Carolinas* (cited hereafter as *H. Lee's Carolinas*), 67 ff., 70; *Washington Papers*, 531, 532. For the offer of post as aide to Washington, see *Washington (p4)Papers*, 589. For the authorization to address his letters to Washington "private," see George Washington to Henry Lee, *MS.*, Oct. 7, 1779; *Washington Papers*, Library of Congress, vol. 118. The Paulus Hook affair is set forth in Henry Lee: *Memoirs of the War in the Southern Department of the United States* (edition of 1869, cited hereafter as *Henry Lee's Memoirs*), 23-24; *E. J. Lee*, 332; 8 *Ford's Washington*, 27, 33; *Washington Papers*, 1119, 1120, 1128. Lee's restlessness in 1780 is reflected in *Washington Papers*, 1297, 1302, 1305, 1307, 1337; Henry Lee to George Washington, *MS.*, July 25, 1780; *Washington MS. Papers*, Library of Congress, vol. 143; Henry Lee to Thos. Sim Lee, *MS.*, Sept. 10, 1780, New York

Public Library. The details of Lee's operations in the South are fully set forth in his *Memoirs*, 223-25; 331-47; 350-52; 361 ff.; 371 ff.; 389 ff.; 473; 528. See William Johnson: *Sketches of the Life and Correspondence of Nathanael Greene* (cited hereafter as *Johnson's Greene*), vol. 2, 121-23, for the charge that Lee hurried the capitulation of Fort Granby. For his presence at Yorktown, see *Washington Papers*, 1965; *Henry Lee's Memoirs*, 507 ff.; H. Lee: *Observations on the Writings of Thomas Jefferson* (second edition, cited hereafter as *H. Lee's Observations*), 153. To distinguish the writings of General Henry Lee from those of his son Major Henry Lee, the former is cited as Henry Lee, and the latter as H. Lee.

<sup>4</sup> *Johnson's Greene*, 321 ff.; *Henry Lee's Memoirs*, 38-40, 550. For Johnson's charge and H. Lee's denial that Henry Lee had quarrelled with Marion and Sumter, and that his resentment grew out of his subordination to Laurens in the operations against John's Island, see *2 Johnson's Greene*, 121-23, 129, 328; *H. Lee's Carolinas*, 328.

<sup>5</sup> *Garden's Anecdotes*, 66.

<sup>6</sup> Lucy was born in 1785 and Henry, May 28, 1787 (*E. J. Lee*, 165-67, 340, 403). The date of Henry Lee's marriage is not known, but it was prior to April 30, 1782 (*E. J. Lee*, 340n). Lucy Grymes Lee married Bernard Carter, brother of Ann Hill Carter, second wife of Henry Lee.

<sup>7</sup> The general assembly of 1786 failed to re-elect him, much to the humiliation of Lee and to the distress of George Washington and James Madison, but when a vacancy occurred soon thereafter, Lee was returned (2 *Hunt's Madison*, 284-85, 286-88; 11 *Ford's Washington*, 88 and note). For Richard Henry Lee's introduction, see 2 *Letters of Richard Henry Lee*, 406.

<sup>8</sup> 3 *Elliott's Debates*, 42, 187, 272, 333, 405.

<sup>9</sup> Henry Lee to George Washington, *MS.*, Sept. 13, 1788; *Washington MS. Papers*, Library of Congress, vol. 241; 5 *Marshall's Washington*, 154.

<sup>10</sup> 13 *Hening's Statutes at Large of Virginia*, 340, 357, 411, 427; James Madison to Henry Lee, Jan. 21, 1792, *Henry Lee's Memoirs*, 44.

<sup>11</sup> Henry Lee to John Fitzgerald of Alexandria, *MS.*, Aug. 3, 1783; Henry Lee to unnamed correspondent, *MS.*, Jan. 28, 1785, *Morgan Collection*, New York Public Library; R. H. Lee to William Shippen, May 8, 1785, 2 *Letters of Richard Henry Lee*, 355-56; 3 *Elliott's Debates*, 182.

<sup>12</sup> Henry Lee to James Madison, *MS.*, Oct. 29, Nov. 19, Dec. 8, 1788, *Madison MS. Papers*, Library of Congress, vol. 16; same to same, *MS.*, March 8, March 14, 1789, Aug. 6, 1791; Madison to Lee, *MS.*, Jan. 8, 1792, *Madison MS. Papers, loc. cit.*, vol. 18; 1 (p7) *Madison's Writings*, 436; George Washington to James Madison, *MS.*, Nov. 17, 1788, *Washington's Letterbook No. 9*, Library of Congress; *Madison Calendar*, 458, 459, 460; 5 *Hunt's Madison*, 306; James Madison to Henry Lee, Dec. 18, 1791, 6 *Hunt's Madison*, 69-70.

<sup>13</sup> Henry Lee to Alexander Hamilton, Nov. 16, 1789; Hamilton to Lee, Dec. 1, 1789; *MS. copies*, New York Public Library.

<sup>14</sup> George Washington to Henry Lee, *MS.*, Sept. 8, 1791, New York Public Library; *Boyd*, 246 ff.

<sup>15</sup> See will of Henry Lee the second in *E. J. Lee*, 295-97.

<sup>16</sup> Henry Lee to James Madison, *MS.*, April 4, 1792, *Writings to Madison*, Library of Congress, vol. 18. Washington decided against giving Lee the command because he was (p8) convinced that officers who had been Lee's seniors in the Revolution would not serve under him in this expedition (see 1 *Madison's Writings*, 547, 551, 553; *Henry Lee's Memoirs*, 44-45; 2 *Letters of Richard Henry Lee*, 549; 12 *Ford's Washington*, 137 ff., 514).

<sup>17</sup> 6 *Hunt's Madison*, 82 ff., 84n; *Madison Calendar*, 459, 460; H. Lee's *Observations*, 121.

<sup>18</sup> 12 *Ford's Washington*, 287-88, 288n; *Henry Lee's Memoirs*, 48.

<sup>19</sup> There seems to be no foundation for the story (F. and C. Hutchins, *Virginia*, 275-76) that Lee fell in love with Ann Carter when he observed her struggling at the table with a great bowl of strawberries, which she was about to drop.

<sup>20</sup> Charles Carter to Henry Lee, May 20, 1793, *Henry Lee's Memoirs*, 48-49.

<sup>21</sup> 12 *Ford's Washington*, 308 ff.; *Journal of the House of Delegates of Virginia, 1793*, pp31, 69.

<sup>22</sup> *H. Lee's Observations*, 13n; *Henry Lee's Memoirs*, 47; 12 *Ford's Washington*, 480; *Journal of the House of Delegates of Virginia, 1793*, pp23, 24, 28, 29. Lee was already the commander of one of the divisions of Virginia militia and had undertaken to organize it (*Journal of the House of Delegates of Virginia, 1793*, p104; divisional order of June 30, 1794, *MS.*, New York Public Library, 7975).

<sup>23</sup> Henry Lee to George Washington, Aug. 17, 1794, *H. Lee's Observations*, 13n; George Washington to Henry Lee, 12 *Ford's Washington*, 458.

<sup>24</sup> 2 *Madison's Writings*, 83.

<sup>25</sup> He was in the general assemblies of 1795, 1796, 1797-98 and 1798-99. At the last of these sessions he opposed the famous "Virginia resolutions" on the alien and sedition (p10) laws (*Virginia Report of 1799-1800*, Randolph Edition, 108-9. Cf. *ibid.*, 150, 155, 158). For his election to Congress, see *H. Lee's Observations*, 121, 193.

<sup>26</sup> *H. Lee's Observations*, 179.

<sup>27</sup> Henry Lee to William Sullivan, *MS.*, July 14, Oct. 1, Nov. 12, Dec. 10, 1797, New York Public Library; *Boyd*, 245.

<sup>28</sup> Thomas Jefferson to H. Lee, Feb. 1, 1807; 19 *Writings of Thomas Jefferson* (Memorial Edition), 158.

<sup>29</sup> Henry Lee to James Monroe, *MS.*, Jan. 10, 1807; New York Public Library.

<sup>30</sup> Ann Lee to Mrs. Richard Bland Lee, *MS.*, Feb. 18, 1799, *Richard Bland Lee Papers*, Library of Congress.

<sup>31</sup> Same to same, *MS.*, Oct. 14, 1800, May 10, 1803, May 3, 1804; *loc. cit.*, Ann Lee to Doctor Robert Carter, Oct. 1, 1805, *Carter MSS.*

<sup>32</sup> Ann Lee to Mrs. Richard Bland Lee, *MS.*, Nov. 2, 1806, *loc. cit.*

<sup>33</sup> *Ibid.* and *Boyd*, 284.

<sup>34</sup> Ann Lee to Mrs. Richard Bland Lee, *MS.*, Jan. 11, 1807, *loc. cit.* Mrs. R. B. Lee, *née* Elizabeth Collins of Philadelphia, must have lost her baby, as it is not listed in *E. J. Lee*.

<sup>35</sup> On the right as one faces the front of the building, which looks south.

<sup>36</sup> Henry Lee to James Madison, Feb. 10, March 21, Dec. 17, 1808, *Madison Calendar*, 461.

<sup>37</sup> *Boyd*, 297 ff.; *H. Lee's Observations*, 180-81; *Orderbook of the Court of Spotsylvania County, Virginia*, 1805-7, p308; 1807-10, pp199, 208, 252, 262, 267, 268, 277, 288, 296, 300, 305; 1810-11, p35.

<sup>38</sup> Henry Lee to Colonel Rhea, Trenton, N. J., *MS.*, March 16, 1811, New York Public Library.

<sup>39</sup> Catharine Mildred Lee, known in the family as Mildred, born Feb. 27, 1811.

<sup>40</sup> *Madison Calendar*, 461-62.

<sup>41</sup> *Niles Register*, Aug. 8, 1812; *National Intelligencer*, Aug. 1, 1812; *A Correct Account of the Conduct of the Baltimore Mob*, by General Henry Lee, One of the Sufferers; Published by a Particular Friend, C. B.; To which is Prefixed an Introductory Detail of the Circumstance, Substantiated by many Concurrent Evidences; Winchester, Va., July, 1814. See also *An Exact and Authentic Narrative of the Events which Took Place in Baltimore on the 27th and 28th of July last* . . . (n. p.) 1812. *Cf. Boyd*, 309 ff. It was believed in the Lee family that despite his injuries, General Henry Lee was given a commission of Major General during the War of 1812. See *Henry Lee's Memoirs*, 53, where President Monroe is cited as authority for this statement. No record of any such commission, however, is to be found in

the office of the Adjutant-General of the United States army.

<sup>42</sup> Henry Lee to James Monroe, *MS.*, Jan. 13, 1813, New York Public Library. *Cf.* Henry Lee to James Madison, April 24, 1814, *Madison Calendar*, 462.

<sup>43</sup> He was in the Barbadoes by Aug. 4, 1813, according to the *Madison Calendar*, 462. In reaching his destination he owed much to the kindness of Admiral Sir John Warren.

---

### Thayer's Note:

<sup>a</sup> An attractive portrait said to be of her, possibly the one Freeman goes on to mention, could once be seen (Ann Hill Carter Lee) on a page at the Lee Boyhood Home Museum; the page has vanished now that the house has apparently come into new ownership, and, in keeping with the continued shrinkage of the Web, is now represented online by a new, less informative site.

[http://penelope.uchicago.edu/Thayer/E/Gazetteer/People/Robert\\_E\\_Lee/FREREL/1/1\\*.html](http://penelope.uchicago.edu/Thayer/E/Gazetteer/People/Robert_E_Lee/FREREL/1/1*.html)

**Next Month: A BACKGROUND OF GREAT TRADITIONS  
Lee's childhood, at Alexandria, VA. His appointment to West Point.**

# From "Horses Sweat, Ladies Perspire"

I would like to share the following family history, a letter from Captain James Terrell to his wife along with a picture of Captain Terrell ~ Beth

Letter from Captain James W. Terrell of Thomas's Legion written to his wife during The War of Northern Aggression advising her regarding their livestock and handling of crops.

Mrs. Ann E. Terrel

Carter Depot Tenn.  
April 18th 1864

My Dear Wife

Your letter of the 3rd inst. reached me today. Lt. Welch got here safe with all his men except Jonas Jenkins whom he has not seen since he left Walhalla. I wrote you a long letter yesterday which started today. I hope you will get it. I need not tell you how glad I was to get your letter by Lt. Welch. Although the news he brings is not cherring except that you are all well. Still I was not uppreared to receive such a statement as all the news we have had from that country has been of the most gloomy character. If you can only manage to keep something to eat I think everything else will go well. If you are scarce of bread stuff don't feed the horses any corn but let them run in the pasture and work then half a day about. Let Martins end of the crop fence alone till after corn is laid by. What land you attempt to cultivate be sure and select out of the best. Labor is too precious now to be expended on poor ground. Let the cows and sheep run out till after the harvest and save the pasture for the horses unless your cows won't come up. Then as you must have milk ant any rate pasture the cows. Be sure and plant a good large patch of sugar cane as the molasses will be good substitute for meat which will be very scarce another year. Plant all the potatoes you can, also beans and peas I mean field peas. Of such things as these a very little labor will support a large family. I will come home as soon as I can procure a furlough but I cannot apply for one just yet. So I am afraid I can not get home in time to help plant any thing. So I send you the above advise. I hope you will be able to raise enough to do you. All that I am uneasy about now is subsistence you this year and next, and there are so many ways to live that I think we will get through. If you can do no better we can as soon as corn is laid by dispose of the horses by selling one and keeping the other in the pasture till cold weather then feeding it on fodder hay and etc which will keep it strong enough to go to mill for you get through the next year. I know you will do the very best you can out study to make every ear of corn every potato sweet or Irish every bean every pea and every stalk of sugar kane you can then the study will be to save all that it made.



Our war prospects now are bright and brightening. We got a telligram here yesterday evening stating that Kirby Smith had gained a great victory over the Yankee Banks in Louisiana. I hope and believe the news it true. It will not in my opinion be long till stiring scenes will transpire in Virginia which I feel confident will result in our favor. If this year does not wind up the struggle both our folks and the Yankees will be disappointed. While it is certain they can't whip us this year.

Col Thomas wrote to me that brother John had volunteered in a Haywood Company. You don't say whether he is still with you or not. I suppose it does not make much odds. Boys without men in them are not much. I have known that some time. But know it better now. A kiss for you.

May the Lord cherish and preserve you dearest one.

Your affectionate husband

Jas. W. Terrell



General Order #11.....The Burnt District (MO)! Painted after the war by a Union Officer who warned GEN Ewing that he would be forever hated if this Order was implemented! My favorite part of the scene is the utter despair depicted by the black man & boy on the right (if it were otherwise, I think the US Officer/Painter would have depicted these two as happy & smiling!!?)....the Yankee's were no damn good for anyone in the South, B or W!!

~JVP, TX

**Gentlemen,**

**We are not alone in our battle against centralized tyranny. There are good men everywhere, ruled by reason and inspired by liberty, who will stand with the right of secession.**

**The following was presented this past weekend in Houston by the Mises Circle. Please take the time to hear it, and pass it on!**

[https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=qTl\\_HDBH7Io&app=desktop](https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=qTl_HDBH7Io&app=desktop)

**Tom Ridenour**

What I Told the Washington Post About Secession



TomWoods.com

*Available on iTunes*



**Shredding the 3x5 card of conventional opinion.**

# THE CIVIL WAR PICKET

CIVIL WAR NEWS, EVENTS, LOCATIONS, SESQUICENTENNIAL AND PHOTOS

THURSDAY, JANUARY 15, 2015

## H.L. Hunley: Scientists peeling away crust on submarine marvel at its craftsmanship



Scientists remove concretion (Photos courtesy of Friends of the Hunley)

Scientists chiseling away decades of sand and shell from the H.L. Hunley are forging a tie to the builders of the historic submarine: A painstaking attention to detail.

Since August 2014, a team of conservators using small tools, including dental chisels and hammers, have been removing concretion coating the exterior.

They are looking for clues as to why the Hunley sank after it became the first submarine to sink an enemy vessel.

"It keeps surprising us," said Nestor Gonzalez, assistant director of Clemson University's Warren Lasch Conservation Center in North Charleston, S.C.

"You have a very close sense of the attention to detail and the care they put into it," he said. "How the rivets are perfectly flush and the finishing is very high quality."

Three days a week, members of the team enter the drained tank, wearing protective eyewear, gloves and masks as they slowly reveal the doomed submarine's skin.

That work is adding to their knowledge of the craftsmanship that went into the Hunley, which was built for the Confederacy in secret in Mobile, Ala., without the use of blueprints.

Scientists have been looking for any separation of the wrought iron plates that cover the exterior. Such a discovery would indicate the Hunley may have suffered fatal damage when the torpedo it planted into the hull of the Union ship USS Housatonic went off.



"We have not seen anything like that," Gonzalez recently told the Picket. "The guy was a very good builder."

What the team is finding is a vessel that, while corroded, retains its structural integrity. The builders staggered the plates to strengthen their hold and carefully connected the rings that form the skeleton of the 40-foot Hunley.

“Everything had been very well thought out,” said Gonzalez.



Conservator Virginie Ternisien at work

## The stuff of legends

The Confederate government brought the Hunley to Charleston in a bid to help break the Union’s siege on the port city. The eight-member crew that set out for the Housatonic knew the risks.

Five members of the first crew died in August 1863 when it accidentally dived while its hatches apparently were open. The second crew's eight members succumbed in October when the Hunley failed to return to the surface.

On the moonlit evening of Feb. 17, 1864, the crew of the hand-cranked vessel set off a charge that sent the Federal vessel to the sandy bottom outside Charleston Harbor.

The Hunley – likened to the shape of a whale -- disappeared from view. What happened to it has become the stuff of legends and research for decades.

For a long time, one prevailing view held that a lucky shot broke the glass in one of the Hunley’s portholes, bringing in rushing water and causing the sub to sink. But research has not proven that theory.

Another scenario holds that the Hunley was swamped by or struck by another Union vessel. Or that it plunged to the sea floor to avoid detection, and never made it back up. A latch on the forward conning tower was found to be not properly locked, adding to the mystery, CNN reported in [a 2014 article](#) about the project.



In January 2013, officials announced a significant discovery.

Research showed the submarine was less than 20 feet from her 135-pound torpedo when it exploded. The effects of the blast may have sent the Hunley to the bottom, where the crew ran out of oxygen.

## Ongoing efforts to solve the mystery

Conservators have been looking for any holes or bullet damage that may help explain why the Hunley sank.

“There is nothing we can see at this point, said Stephanie Crette, director of the Lasch center.

The vessel appears intact.

“We are stabilizing the items, but also working to unveil the secrets of the submarine. We are moving toward finding evidence as to why it sank,” added Gonzalez. So far, there are “no new clues.”



Removing the sediment from the Hunley is a critical component in understanding its construction and what happened.

Last May, scientists immersed the submarine in a bath of toxic sodium hydroxide to help loosen the concretion. The idea is to loosen the sediment, remove as much salt as possible from the wreckage and help protect it from further corrosion.

The scientists work from about 8 a.m. to 2 p.m. on Tuesday, Wednesday and Thursdays after solution is drained from the tank and the pH level is lowered, said Crette. The tank is refilled each day when their work is completed. Analysis is done on other days. (The general public can see the Hunley on weekends).

In some areas, the concretion can be up to two inches deep. The team works in a grid fashion, first exposing the rivet line and then working their way to the center of the plates.

### Next up: Hunley's interior

Scientists have completed cleaning nearly all of the exterior plates and are moving on to cast iron components – a very long and complicated process.

“Cast iron is very difficult,” said Gonzalez. “But it is also very rewarding ... We are seeing absolutely outstanding surfaces.”

Builders used cast iron for the dive planes, the conning towers and for parts of the bow and stern. Conservators are excited about exploring the connection that linked the torpedo spar to the hull. “It can reveal fantastic details,” said Gonzalez.

Officials said they have found no evidence indicating a problem with forward conning tower may have had anything to do with the Hunley's demise.

Scientists expect to begin deconcretion of the interior in about three months, with the entire process completed by the end of the year.



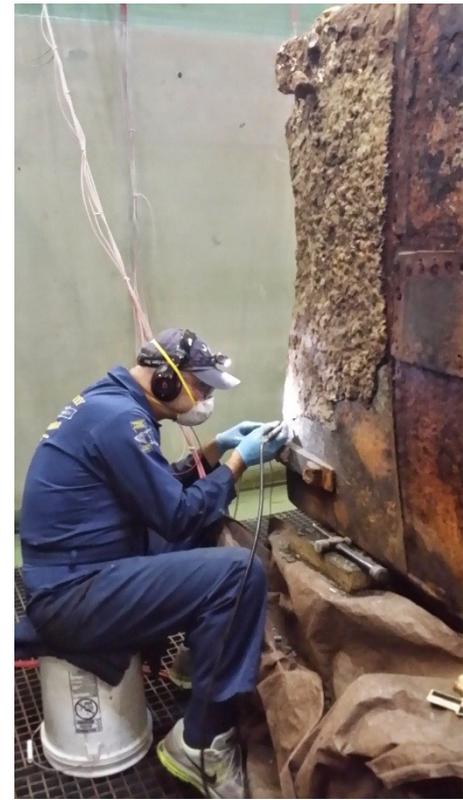
While the Hunley submarine is empty, there's a possibility that an artifact may break loose during the work, Crette told the Picket. One scientist found an entire snail shell in the encrusted exterior.

With the chipping away of each piece of crust, the submarine is returning to its original appearance, the conservators guided by an 1863 painting of the Hunley by Conrad Wise Chapman.

The nonprofit **Friends of the Hunley** provides a history of the boat and current conservation updates on its website.

"A lookout aboard the Union Navy's largest ship was tired, cold -- but restless. Talk of a Confederate secret weapon was in and out of his thoughts. Suddenly he spotted something move in the chilly waters. A porpoise? There were certainly a lot of them around. But something about this one didn't seem right."

What didn't seem right was the Hunley, which sank the Housatonic. Five of its crew members died; 150 others were soon rescued.



Paul Mardikian works on the bow

The eight men on the Hunley also died. The quest continues for the manner and cause of their deaths.



(Photos courtesy of Friends of the Hunley)

# THE HISTORY REVISIONISTS

01/05/2015 By: Joan Hough <http://www.deovindice.org/index.html>



All freedom lovers should thank God that there now exists in America an ever growing number of men and women whose superior intellectual abilities are no longer chained down by the indoctrinators who have been busily indoctrinating Americans for a century and a half.

The indoctrinators (Socialist-Communist-inspired brain washers) assiduously continue to work their magic on the intellects of the American populace—giving especial attention at the University level to all students likely to have any significant amount of communication with the public. As always, in the history lessons

the idea of slavery and evil Southern Planters as the cause of America's War of wars is embedded in the brains of the students.

Such assiduous efforts in mind bending, are having an unexpected effect -- one of the highest activities of western mankind, History, as a profession, is dying on the vine.

Following the abrupt and brutal end of Southern freedom and U.S. Constitutional government, New England Puritan-Republican lies totally covered the historical waterfront. Thereafter came the completely "liberal" biases into the field of history, followed more recently by military leftists' near violent suppression of all "history-dissenter-professors." Organized minority groups, probably with government encouragement, join in the fun. Marxist created "Democracy" has oozed all over the form of our U.S. government that was designed as a "Republic."

According to the remarkable, professional "Truth" Historian, Dr. Clyde N. Wilson, "The prevailing 'mainstream' interpretations of American history today are interpretations that fifty years ago were current only in the Communist neighborhoods of the New York City boroughs. Thus Communists' Glorious" Multiculturalism and their "New World Order" is the latest mantra for Professional Historians and their controllers. Americans, not updated on left-wing modern terminology, never imagined the real meaning of the jubilant exclamations of "The New World Order is HERE!" shouted during the first and only term of office by U.S. President "Poppy" Bush of the "Watch my lips, there will be no new taxes" reputation.

In his *Defending Dixie*, Wilson tells us that Globalism [the stuff the New World Order promotes] is all-important to today's Historians. They continue the extension of our national History, which since 1865, has been nothing but a fake. It is not the history of America, but the history of New England and of only New England. It is a history written by the Winners of that mean, ugly and totally, barbaric, brutal War of Northern Aggression.

New Englanders deliberately made American History New England's exclusive property. They even went so far as to remake George Washington into a "farmer," instead of a Southern planter. They used the absolute power gained by their Republican controlled U.S. Army over the Confederate nation as a stepping-stone to global control. They did this not only in history, but even in literature, wherein they promoted the dullest, most uninspired New Englanders' works over those of absolutely brilliant, imaginative, gifted Southern writers. In the doing, they caused American college students to become literature illiterates --to loathe literature and especially poetry.

The environment of academia today is such that most modern indoctrinators, themselves, are intellectual prisoners -- mere conduits passing on all that was passed to them, never bothering to verify it or to take even a peek at "the other side." Possibly in most instances their lack of knowing is because such is their choice and they have, in numerous fashions, been remunerated for it.

Now, almost out of the blue, the historians in academia have begun attacking both the free thinkers--those in their own professions and the amateur outsiders as "revisionists." The non-professionals are viewed as amateurs daring to stick their noses into something not their business. The P. Historians have total disdain for the Truth Historians--even the most brilliant of historical researchers among them--the authors of books now receiving wide national acclaim.

Never will one of the P. historians acknowledge the amazing gifts of authors such as Frank Conner, Al Benson, Walter Donald Kennedy, James Ronald Kennedy, Clint Johnson, Mary Deborah Petite, Walter Brian Cisco, James E. Stallings, Sr., H.W. Crocker III, and persons whose works appear only on Internet --such as the writers on the Georgia Heritage Council and the Southern Heritage News and Views Site and the present site. Intense attacks are aimed at those scholars with Doctorates in fields other than history--people such as Dr. Thomas DiLorenzo and Dr. John Avery Emison. Undoubtedly there are other True Historians who annoy the P. Historians. Certainly all now sharing their knowledge via Internet qualify for P. historian's disdain.

Should a professional embrace the task of truth seeking, and express regard for the work of even a single so-called amateur, no matter how many books that professional has written, he is viewed by his colleagues as a history inferior, and turncoat. No grant money from a government agency or from any Rockefeller, Ford, Carnegie, or other non-profit, tax-free foundation will be coming his way. No honors will be given that professional traitor, not if his colleagues can prevent such.

Despite all the slings and arrows of the Professionals, however, just as the South was blessed with most of West Point's finest military men, our land is being blessed with an ever-increasing number of truth-seeking Americans who are super fine, honest, historical scholars.

The P. Historians (Professional Historians) are infuriated that more and more persons of superior intellectual ability are becoming dedicated, non-professional, "amateur" historians. The Professionals see this as "the Invasion of the Interlopers." They take it quite personally, believing that the appearance on the historical scene of the "meddlers" has now reached career-threatening proportions. Fearing that the discoveries of the amateurs may climb to a "life threatening." level, they react in the typical Saul Alinsky-prescribed manner -- they ridicule, they insult. The difference in the interlopers' values and their disagreement becomes for the P. Historians, not only a manifestation of evil, but the reason the invaders must be eliminated.

The Professionals force the idea on neutral bystanders that one must be educated only in history or one is incapable of comprehending history and interpreting it correctly. They declare all revelations made by a history interloper whom they term a "revisionist," must be ignored or the findings described as laughably ridiculous. They have convinced themselves, and would convince all others, that just as only one trained in brain surgery should cut on brains, only professional historians should speak of or write about history; John Q. Public must rely only on the P. historians for "true" history--and not just "any old" professional historian, but one that meets the approval of the P. Historians' elite, leftist clique.

And what, you may ask, in history is such an enigma it can only be solved by Professionals? Your question, of course, is rhetorical for you well know that history is nothing more than time gone by--it is nothing more than "the past," some of which even we ordinary folks have actually lived through. History

then is something that persons possessing somewhat above “walking around sense” are likely to have some ability to evaluate if they seek and can find the records or other evidence. According to the Professionals, however, unless you are a “P. card carrying Historian,” no matter what fine research skills you possess or how high is your verbal intelligence, how excellent is your memory, or how amazing is your ability in written language, you must neither speak of history, nor write of it—not even of the past which you have personally experienced.

If you are not one of the P. degreed Historians, according to them, you are, regardless of your level of formal education or the presence of superior intellectual ability, simply too dumb to deal “properly” with history. Perhaps after you are long dead, they may decide that your memoirs or books or articles or essays are history—that is if they like what you have written, but if the content is politically incorrect—your words are destined to be figuratively or literally trashed, as have been those of countless long dead, extremely bright Confederates.

One of America’s most gifted, most prolific and most talented of authors, a true member of the literati, had his work consigned to the ash heap simply because he was a Southerner who wrote what the New Englanders did not wish Americans to know. His name is William Gilmore Sims. Edgar Allan Poe declared that Simms’ fiction was evidence of genius—that had not Simms been a Southerner, all Americans would have acknowledged his genius.

Truth Historian- expert professional historian, Dr. Clyde N. Wilson reminds us of Sims and that there were numerous Southern writers who never received their just due of recognition, but had their work and themselves slandered because they were not New Englanders. Among these were Hawthorne, Poe, and Melville. Some others received deserved praise, but only because the Europeans’ acclaimed them.

Rather than “Amateur Historians,” a possibly more apropos title for America’s new, industrious, truth seeking, non history professional- newcomers, is “the Truth Historians.” Certainly there is nothing amateurish about their approach to their self-assigned jobs of finding that which for numerous devious reasons, been deliberately hidden from fellow Americans—facts that have been cunningly twisted or totally altered and washed into the brains of the naïve and gullible young and old Americans.

Some people, of course, defining that word to mean “Revolutionaries,” may see the Truth Historians as iconoclasts. Thinking back to the past and the men and women involved in that first War of Secession, the Revolutionary War, against the all-powerful central government of Mother England, perhaps the label,

“History Revolutionaries” is, indeed, the title most suitable for current Truth Historians. They, most assuredly, are in revolt against the lying P. Historical Establishment, and would see the members of that bunch either recant their execration of the South as the national center of all evil or find themselves exposed as liars.

The “Truth historians” are adept at researching. They do know how to dig—in archives, in museums, in old manuscripts, in diaries, in books, and in libraries, including the Library of Congress.

How puerile are the P. Historians to accuse the Truth Seeking Ones of revising history. The Truth Historians, seeking truth, revise only historical lies—they expose them, they correct them, they counter them with absolute truth. The “real” History Revisionists were those Creators of the term “Civil War” for a War that was never, by the then definition of the term, a “Civil War,” but an Invasion of the legally seceded South’s nation by the Republican Party controlled United States military.

The Revisionists were the New Party Republicans and the New Englander writers and historians who told and wrote fanciful historical lies based almost entirely on Marxist-Republican propaganda—much of it

circulated right out of Lincoln's Secretary of War, Edwin Stanton's Office and bearing the stamp on it of Charles Dana, the clever Marxist journalist Lincoln chose as his Assistant Secretary of War. (While Managing Editor of the New York Tribune, Dana, a good buddy of Karl Marx, had Horace Greeley hire the "father of Communism" as the Tribune's foreign correspondent. During his ten years of employment by Greeley, Marx wrote over 200 Communist articles for northerners to read and absorb. He even supported Lincoln for U.S. President and wrote him a glowing letter of congratulations after the election.

Present day P. historians merely accept and repeat the Marxist propaganda, thus they are the leaders of the modern generation of Revisionists. They revise historical truth. It is not the so-called "interlopers" who are the Liars. The "real" Revisionists are joined in their greed-fed folly by political opportunists who accept the Republican lies and by "bought" publicists, including television and theatrical personages, politicians on both political parties and their controllers.

There can be no honest denial of the truth that the same elitists, the New World Order gang, controlling the two giant political parties propagate all the lies. The New World Order gang includes the Rockefeller bunch, the George Bushy boys, the Clintonites, Saul Alinsky. Hillary and the Obamites and "the Unholy Foursome"-- the Council on Foreign Relations, the Trilateral Commission, the Bilderberg Group, and the International Bankers. These billionaire elitists own the television networks, the newspapers and the Congress; they are deeply involved in the major tax-free foundations. Because of their bucks, their acquired power, and the taxpayers' money, they have for many years successfully programmed young historians with lies. The tax free foundations, such as Rockefeller, Carnegie, etc. have conducted formal indoctrination classes for budding historians—converting them easily into well-programmed perpetrators of the "Hate the South and The New World Order is wonderful" propaganda.

Contrary to all of the insulting depredations of the "Professionals," the real Truth Historians bring into their work, their "book learning" and the formal and informal experiences which have developed them to the degree that they can recognize truth when they find it. They know how and where to search for truth and many of them have not only the expertise required to disseminate it, but true genius enabling their evaluation of it. Some speak and/or write in a manner more comprehensible than that of most P. Historians. Despite the highly organized enemies facing them, the Truth Historians somehow manage to share their discoveries with a public enthusiastically welcoming truth. This is what most infuriates and threatens the professionals.

The new Truth History notables possess a strange and uncanny ability for historians-- they can actually think. To attain this amazing and now rather rare American feat, the "Truth Notabilities" had to endanger their jobs, their careers, their professions, their societal positions, their friendships and even their familial relationships. They did this in the process of hurling off gallons of Marxist Brainwash and peeling back the thick veneer of lies which has been for more than a century glued over all printed accounts of governmental activities in the United States and even preached from Christian pulpits.

Truth-historians have virtually to leap over the hurdles set for them via public, government controlled educational institutions. For some Truth Historians the "regaining of brain function operation" is still ongoing and remains painful. It is difficult because it requires the removing of rose-colored glasses and discovering that men once seen as glorious heroes are, at the best, mere humans with feet of clay and, at the worst, villainous, treasonous, greed-filled monsters. (Even the man who has been sold to generations of Americans as the nation's greatest president is revealed as the monster he was.)

Since 1865 the gluing of the veneer of lies has been the handiwork of clever 1848ers, their biological progeny, their political progeny, and their worshiping ideologues, including most P. historians. Many of Americans richest elitists, operating *sub rosa* through their tax-free foundations, at the tax payers' expense, and tax write offs for their own donations, have with dogged dedication to their New World Order, kept the

lies ongoing. They, as members of the New World Order gang, spread all that successful Communist propagandized ideology started in America in 1849. They continue the work toward the goals Karl Marx manifested not only in his and Friedrich Engels' COMMUNIST MANIFESTO, but also in Marx's two hundred and more articles published by Greeley and Dana--some as none by-lined editorials. Marx's work appeared in America's most widely circulated newspaper, The New York Tribune" owned by Lincoln's good buddy Horace Greeley. (Lincoln, a newspaper reading addict, undoubtedly feasted on Marx's words in the paper and in his Communist "Bible"—as is evident if one compares Lincoln's actions with Marx's "Ten Commandments."

It is not the Truth-Historians whose craniums are so empty that they failed to learn that the nation's non-English speaking/reading Germans bought, read, and swallowed whole the views of Lincoln and Marx expressed in the German language newspaper owned and published by Lincoln, and the one owned by Greeley. It is not Truth-Historians who are unaware that Abe Lincoln was the first President to institute in America the Marxist plan of Progressive Income Tax. For 85 years before him, America prospered. It is not the Truth-Historians who failed to understand that it took Abe Lincoln and his Marxist-Republican party to destroy the States' Rights foundation of the U.S. government and thus to begin the Marxist task of turning a Constitutionally-based Republic into a Communist wanted Democracy.

Present day Professional Historians, their sycophants, their naive followers, and elected politicians in both Parties ignore the non-Constitutionality of the Income Tax and various other shredding jobs on the Constitution and approve of Communism, but more and more voters are beginning to see straight through the Communist propaganda and the lies of the Victors of the War of Northern Aggression.

Who tells us that it was the Marxist corrupt plan of government control of education that was first, instituted in the South during Reconstruction and then spread throughout the north? Who tells us that the Central bank (the so-called Federal Bank) was a Marxist plan? Who tells us that stirring racial hate was a part of the Marxist plan, or that removing U.S. Senators from the control of their states was a well-aimed Communist shot that hit the very heart of our Republic form of government? Who tells us that progressive Income tax again put into the Constitution in 1913 for all of America to suffer under, was another Marxist plan? Who dares tell us that the Amendments to the Constitution made during the late 1900s were illegal, according to the Constitution, itself? One should not attempt to hold his breath until this is done by a Supreme Court Justice or a pocket-jingling politician of either Party

Who tells Americans that the Union's robbing and redistribution of the South's homes, land, forests and wealth and the elimination of the effect of Southern wisdom on the nation was a Marxist plan? Who tells us the truth about the Marxist plan to erase the family unit, to have "the village" become responsible for the children, to eliminate marriage because it is the glue that creates real civilization and engenders the desire to obtain and hold private property and pass it on to heirs—something Marxism loathes as Marxists loathed all Southern land and/or home owners? Do not expect to hear this from a "lady Politician" who declares "the Village should raise our children" or from the journalists and the Politicians (in both Parties) who have praised her zeal and supposed intellectual brilliance.

The noble P. Historians' mouths are shut and pens are stilled when it comes to reporting truth.

Who teaches that the Uncivil War of Northern Aggression and the Republican Party that kick-started it were both the work of Marxists aided by a few crazed New Englanders and by new immigrants who had never read the U.S. Constitution because it was not written in German? You did not learn this from the P. historians and all they have brainwashed with their invented revision of historical truth. Only the Truth Historians dare tell that truth.

I say, HURRAH for Truth Tellers.--the honest Historians who, base all they write on facts discovered by their

independent studies and by those of their fellow truth-seekers. Each time these people share those newly discovered truths they prove that the Bachelor of Arts in History, the Master of Arts in History, the Doctor of Philosophy in History or the degrees in Education now serving as Union Cards for Historians, instead of being the prerequisites for acquiring knowledge of historical truth, actually deter the finding of it. The Professional Historians educational process does this by loading the would-be historians' brains down with a fluid comprised of hate-filled propaganda loaded with distorted truths and outright lies.

Let the snide, mutual back-scratching Professionals profess their academic superiority, as they so desire. Let them continue to give each other financial rewards and continue slathering each other with deceptive accolades. They fool only themselves. All believers in freedom have begun to recognize that the men and women in academia have hearkened so much to each other for generations that they are either "mind-boggled "or deliberately lying when they prattle what they prattle and teach what they teach.

Today's "P. Historians," no matter their ages, with few exceptions, are seen as: Perambulating, Petulant Pedantic s." Fussy, and finicky, they are compelled to defend all that they have been taught. They dare not let any newly revealed truths gain any credence in the minds of their students -- to do so would be to admit that they have actually BEEN WRONG! This cannot be! They should all be ashamed to look at themselves in their mirrors!

The Professional Historians (with few exceptions) are the real revisionists. Because their profession's revision of truth began so far back in time, most of them neither know the truth nor care about it. They are committed to passing on to the next generation a flame and they are either unaware, or it matters not, that the flame was lit by persons obsessed with Communist Revised History concerning the War of Northern Aggression. The flame spits smoke over the truth about the War of Northern Aggression. It hides the real reason the U.S. has been constantly at war. It makes it difficult to see that the States came together NOT as a Democracy but as a "Republic."

The flame's actions make it easy for the enemies of the Republic to force upon America's young that it is the duty of the young to genuflect to their "Mother U.S and the new Global Government," to financially support the nations of the world, to police all nations, to spread "democracy" throughout the globe—even if they must die to do it.

With all of this, the New World Order gang continues selling their lies that Communism has never stuck a foot into and never had enormous input into the laws passed by the U.S. government. McCarthy, so they say, was wrong. FDR, Carter, LBJ, Lincoln, the Bush presidents, and Obama were all right—the Communists—those New World Order folks are the ones we should all kneel down before.

The P. Historians must force upon impressionable students the absolute lie that not only was the so-called "Civil War" fought to free the slaves but that all Southerners knew this for a fact, back then---even the little Southern children. That Yankee elites did not finance the mass Murderer John Brown in order to inform the South that even if it remained in the Union Southerners would be killed? The War had to happen because the Marxist-Republican needed it in order to redistribute the South's wealth!

The madly publishing P. Historians must enforce their lie that Southerner Planters were decadent, cruel, slave beating, slave raping, fornicating monsters—that the Planters ugly wives were prone to torture winsome, nubile, black female slaves, probably out of jealousy, or because the slave had nibbled on a bit of swiped from the candy jar, candy—that all mixed race folks were sired by those nasty Southern Planters. The P. Historians proof of any of this is nothing more than the lies of a fellow member in the "Hate the South" club.

Some historians even quote Harriet Beecher Stowe as an Anti-Confederate authority. Stowe, the

imaginative novelist of Uncle Tom's Cabin, is considered an Expert on the South although the woman finally admitted that she had simply "dreamed" the contents of her book and had never set one little tootsie in the South until Reconstruction enabled her to buy for pennies some destitute Confederate's plantation. One, maybe more, of her madly preaching, against the South, Beecher brothers escaped from serving in the war the Beechers so favored, by hiding out part time across the ocean and then in New England where rich fathers hired soldier replacements for their sons and themselves—something never done in the South.

And of course the P. Historians will not bother to mention that the north, even New York City, had its share of black slaves, as did all of the New England states. Never will you hear the wily liars tell that not a single black or white slave was ever brought to American by a ship flying a Confederate flag because the Confederate Constitution forbade slave importation. The north's Constitution did not and that was not changed even when the Republicans had told power in 1861. The take over of the U.S. government by the Republicans did not include banning slave trade—something they could have done easily. New England-er slave traders even sold slaves and delivered them to other nations long after the end of their War supposedly to end slavery.

Never will you hear the clique of P. historians explain that if Americans are determined to do flag hating, blacks and University professors should zero in on the U.S. stars and stripes and not the flag with St. Andrew's Cross for only the U.S. flag ever flew over ships filled with captured slaves of any color. P Historians will never tell that the second Republican president of the United States, Grant, did not release his own slaves until long after his Republican's War.

The Republican Party leaders' lips or pens will never utter the truth that their War was no War Between the States, but a War Between Nations---started by the very long planned, unconstitutional, criminal mechanisms of Marxist-Radicals who originated the Republican Party. Only the Truth-Historians report this fact. Nobody seems to remember that when certain Southerners opted to refer to the War as "The War Between the States" they did so merely because it would make the Winners angry for the South to be referred to as the legally seceded nation it was and the War as what it really was—a move for monsters to eradicate the U.S. Constitution and the major element with a history of creating and supporting it.

How unfair it is that the crimes of the villainous Abe Lincoln, his Marxists, his military, and the United States government go untold, uncompensated for, and the victims' families never receive any apologies, but consistently hear their loved ones declared villains guilty of treason.

How unfair it is that citizens of the north who knew the truth about the actions of the Republican Party were kept from voting at the precincts both times Lincoln ran for the presidency, had their personal property destroyed, and were, by Lincoln, sent to prison without trial. How wrong it is that a Dictator and his supposedly American Republicans unjustly and unconstitutionally punished thousands of northern citizens who knew and understood the U.S. Constitution, the true history of the Declaration of Independence and the Articles of Confederation. And they knew that the Southern states had the right to secede—that any state had that right. They even remembered at least two separate occasions when even the New England states had planned to secede and almost did it. How true it is that the Republicans were criminals!

Hurrah for the Truth-Historians! They shout the truth-- the South was right. The Yankee War, as the Marxists required, was the pre-requisite for the Marxist-Republican's take over of the nation and the replacement of the the U.S. Republic with a Democracy until global control and their New World Order of Communism could become a reality. Who, in 1865 could even dream that the year 2013 would see the Marxist goals approach ultimate fulfillment.



## Humphrey Marshall

(January 13, 1812 – March 28, 1872) was a four-term antebellum United States Congressman and a brigadier general in the Confederate States Army and a Confederate Congressman during the War of Northern Aggression. Marshall was born in Frankfort, Kentucky, to John Jay (1785-1846) and Anna Birney Marshall. John Jay Marshall was a legislator, law reporter and judge, whose father, also named Humphrey Marshall, was a member of the United States Senate from Kentucky. Marshall graduated from the United States Military Academy at West Point, New York, in 1832, was assigned to the mounted rangers, served in the Black Hawk War, and was breveted as a second lieutenant. However, he resigned from the Army in April 1833 to study law. He was admitted to the bar in 1833 and practiced in Frankfort for two years before moving to Louisville. He became captain in the Kentucky militia in 1836, major in 1838, and lieutenant colonel in 1841. In 1836 he raised a company of volunteers and marched to defend the Texas frontier against the Indians, but his force disbanded on hearing of General Sam Houston's victory at San Jacinto. In 1846 he became Colonel of the 1st Kentucky Cavalry during the Mexican-American War, where he fought at the Battle of Buena Vista as a part of Zachary Taylor's Army of Occupation. Returning from Mexico, Marshall engaged in agricultural pursuits in Henry County, Kentucky. Marshall's native Kentucky was a border state. Marshall, a moderate in his political views, supported John C. Breckinridge for president in the Election of 1860 and advocated

the commonwealth's neutrality. When his efforts failed and Union troops occupied Kentucky, Marshall enlisted in the Confederate army with the rank of brigadier general, and aided the recruitment effort. He was stationed in western Virginia, but saw limited combat. In January 1862, he lost a minor battle in eastern Kentucky to future President James A. Garfield. Garfield's Federal cavalry had chased off Marshall's cavalymen at Jenny's Creek near Paintsville, Kentucky. Marshall withdrew to the forks of Middle Creek, two miles from Prestonsburg, on the road to Virginia. Garfield attacked on January 9, precipitating the Battle of Middle Creek. He eventually forced Marshall to withdraw after a day's fighting. Frustrated by his inability to secure a good assignment, Marshall briefly resigned his commission in June 1862. However, he soon returned to the army and participated in Braxton Bragg's Kentucky operations in the fall of 1862. Resigning again from the army in June 1863, he moved to Richmond, Virginia, and continued the practice of law. In November, he was elected to the Second Confederate Congress as a representative from Kentucky's 8th District. With the collapse of the Confederacy, he briefly fled to Texas.

# Hundreds Celebrate Lee-Jackson Day in Lexington

Posted: Jan 17, 2015 9:53 PM CST

By Whitney Delbridge



Click [HERE](#) to see video news report.



**Lexington, VA- Hundreds from all over the country flocked to Lexington today to celebrate Lee-Jackson Day.**

**The state holiday, created in 1889, celebrates the birthdays of Robert E. Lee and Thomas "Stonewall" Jackson.**

**The holiday was actually Friday, but Saturday folks came together to hold a ceremony at Jackson's grave, watched a parade, and finished with a service at Lexington Presbyterian Church.**

**Many say they are proud to honor Lee and Jackson for the men of character they were, and that's why they gather each year to remember them.**

**"We believe that general Robert E. Lee and Stonewall Jackson were good people."**

**"We've been living in Virginia for many years and I think it's very important for the kids to know the history of the place where they live."**

**To honor men they say changed the nation for the better. He more than anyone seriously began the work of rebuilding our shattered region and our divided nation," said guest speaker, Ben Jones.**

**They say both men had devout Christian character and cared for everyone around them.**

**"Jackson said that black slaves should be free and have a chance, he felt that they should be taught to read so that they could learn the Bible," said Jones.**

**Lee Jackson - Day has been honored in Lexington since the late 19th century, but in 2000, the first large scale celebration in nearly 25 years was brought back to the town, and each year since the Sons of Confederate Veterans, Virginia Flagers, and other groups join with the public to honor their memory.**

**After a ceremony at Stonewall Jackson's Grave, the group marched downtown in a parade. Followed by a memorial service at Lexington Presbyterian Church--the church Jackson attended.**

**We could not ask for better examples than general Lee and General Jackson," said Charles Kelly Barrow, of the Sons of the Confederate Veterans.**

<http://www.wset.com/story/27877835/hundreds-celebrate-lee-jackson-day-in-lexington#.VLvO9KdJYFd.facebook>



Ok! so let's have a laugh! This was found outside Nathan Bedford Forrest home, in Pulaski, TN during a re-enactment week-end. I bet Forrest would have a good laugh to read this one!

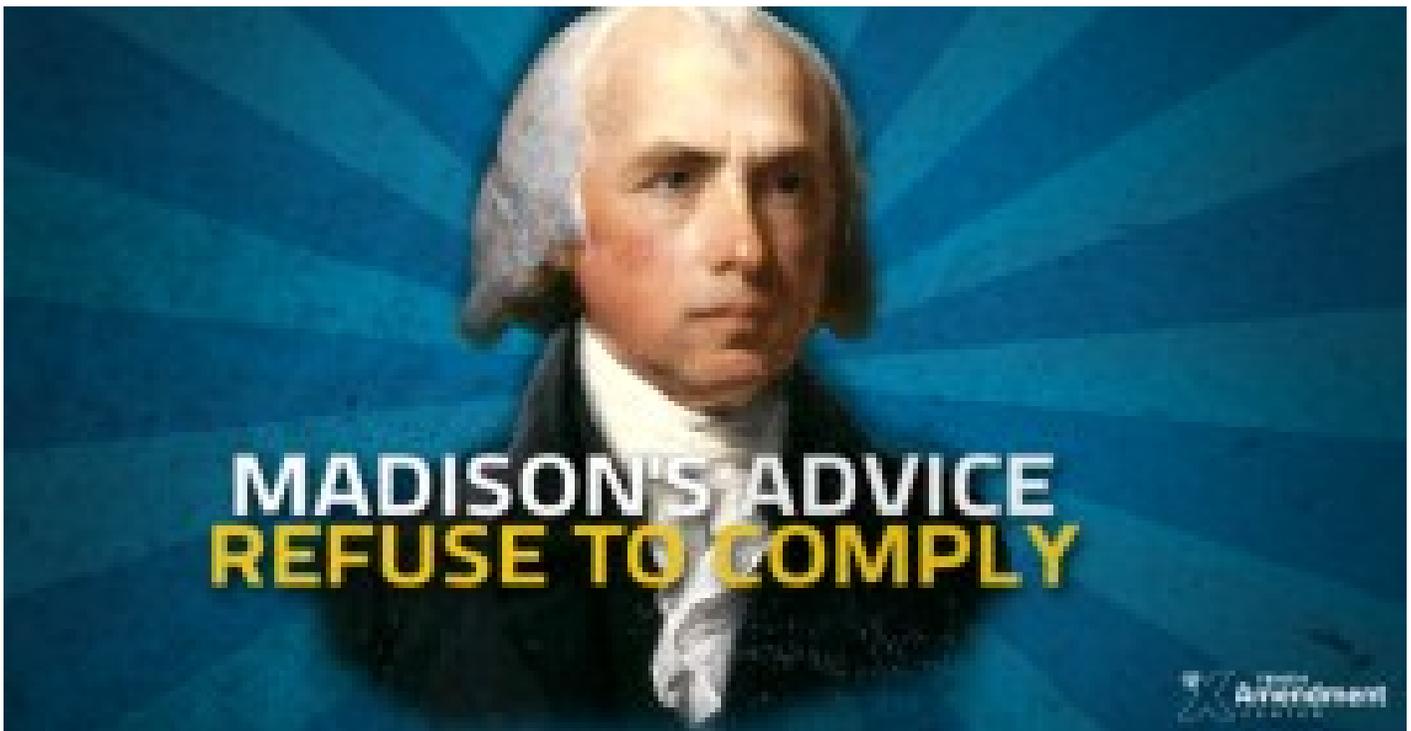


**Never stand and take  
a charge... charge them  
too.**

***Nathan Bedford Forrest***

# James Madison: How to Stop the Federal Government

You are here:



In response to federal overreach, most people tend to focus on three types of actions to stop them: elections, conventions, and lawsuits. While they all have their place in an overall strategy to defend the Constitution, none of them should be the **first step** forward. That is, if you follow the advice of the “Father of the Constitution.” Here’s what James Madison had to say in [\*Federalist #46\*](#). The Influence of the State and Federal Governments Compared:

*“Should an unwarrantable measure of the federal government be unpopular in particular States, which would seldom fail to be the case, or even a warrantable measure be so, which may sometimes be the case, the means of opposition to it are powerful and at hand. The disquietude of the people; their repugnance and, perhaps refusal to cooperate with officers of the Union, the frowns of the executive magistracy of the State; the embarrassment created by legislative devices, which would often be added on such occasions, would oppose, in any State, very serious impediments; and were the sentiments of several adjoining States happen to be in Union, would present obstructions which the federal government would hardly be willing to encounter.”*

Let me translate. Madison said that when the federal government passes an unconstitutional measure there are powerful methods to oppose it – amongst the people and in the states. He also pointed out that those methods were available even for warrantable, that is constitutional, measures.

Madison told us of four things that should be done to resist federal powers, whether merely unpopular, or unconstitutional.

**1. Disquietude of the people** – Madison expected the people would throw a fit when the feds usurped power – even using the word “repugnance” to describe their displeasure. That leads to the next step.

**2. Repugnance and Refusal to co-operate with the officers of the Union** – Noncompliance. The #1 dictionary of the time defined repugnance as “disobedient; not obsequious” (compliant). If you want to stop the federal government, you have to disobey them. Madison also suggested that people would perhaps directly refuse to cooperate with federal agents. This is an approach we preach here every day at the Tenth Amendment Center. James Madison apparently knew what we know today. The feds rely on cooperation from state and local governments, as well as individuals. When enough people refuse to comply, they simply can’t enforce their so-called laws.

**3, The frowns of the executive magistracy of the State** – Here Madison envisions governors formally protesting federal actions. This not only raises public awareness; executive leadership will also lead to the next step – legislative action.

**4. Legislative devices, which would often be added on such occasions** – Madison keeps this open-ended, and in the years soon after, which I’ll cover shortly, we learn how both he and Thomas Jefferson applied this step. Madison also told us that if several adjoining States would do the same it would be an effective tool to stop federal acts. To repeat, he said that doing this “*would present obstructions which the federal government would hardly be willing to encounter.*”

Judge Andrew Napolitano agreed recently and said that people need to stop enforcing unconstitutional federal laws. He also said that if you could get an entire state doing this, it would make federal laws “nearly impossible to enforce.”

What’s important to note here, are some glaring omissions. The powerful means that Madison told us would be used to oppose federal power successfully did NOT include federal lawsuits in federal courts. He also did NOT include “voting the bums out” as a strategy, either.

## FIRST RESPONSE

Compare that with how people generally respond to what they consider unconstitutional or unpopular federal acts today.

The first thing I tend to hear from people who are opposed to a federal act is the “vote the bums out” mantra. We’ll fire congress, right?

Or some people tell us we have to sue and let the courts decide.

I’ve got some news for you. There’s nothing from the founders – anywhere – in which they tell us that our first response to extreme, repeated violations of the constitution and liberty is to vote the bums out, or sue the feds in federal court. Nothing.

## LEGISLATIVE DEVICES

Thomas Jefferson followed up on this in 1798 with the same kind of advice. That year, the Adams administration passed a wildly unconstitutional attack on the freedom of speech with the Alien and Sedition Acts. In response, while sitting as vice-president, Jefferson secretly drafted the Kentucky Resolutions, and here’s a little of what he wrote:

“The several states composing the united states of america are not united on a principle of unlimited submission to their general government.”

“where powers are assumed which have not been delegated, a nullification of the act is the rightful remedy”

“that every State has a natural right in cases not within the compact to nullify of their own authority all assumptions of power by others within their limits: that without this right, they would be under the dominion, absolute and unlimited, of whosoever might exercise this right of judgment for them”

Madison was consistent in his views on this. In 1798, he also drafted and help pass something known as the Virginia Resolutions, a state-level “legislative device” in response to the Alien and Sedition Acts. Here’s a key part:

*in case of a deliberate, palpable, and dangerous exercise of other powers, not granted by the said compact, the states who are parties thereto, have the right, and are in duty bound, to interpose for arresting the progress of the evil, and for maintaining within their respective limits, the authorities, rights and liberties appertaining to them.*

Like Madison advised in Federalist #46, both he and Thomas Jefferson advised a state-level response to dangerous federal acts. In 1798, neither of them even mentioned voting or lawsuits.

Jefferson told us that a “nullification is the rightful remedy.” And Madison told us that states are “duty-bound to interpose.”

When Daniel Webster called on these same principles in response to military conscription plans during the war of 1812, he said:

“The operation of measures thus unconstitutional and illegal ought to be prevented by a resort to other measures which are both constitutional and legal. It will be the solemn duty of the State governments to protect their own authority over their own militia, and to interpose between their citizens and arbitrary power. These are among the objects for which the State governments exist; and their highest obligations bind them to the preservation of their own rights and the liberties of their people”



Become a member and support the TAC!

Here’s the bottom line. You are not supposed to wait 2 or 4 years for some new politicians to get in office and give your permission to be free. You are not supposed to wait 2 or 4 or 6 years for some federal court to tell you, “ok, you be free now.”

You are supposed to stand up resist, refuse to comply and nullify unconstitutional federal acts – as soon as they happen.

All the money and time you throw at firing congress or winning in federal court will never, ever work – unless you start resisting right here in your state. And, that resistance needs to be your first response, not your last.

**NEXT STEPS**



<http://tenthamendmentcenter.com/2014/12/15/james-madison-how-to-stop-the-federal-government/>



# Legends of Texas-Tom Green

by Jeff Murrah

## Tom Green: Early Life and Education

Tom Green was born in Virginia on June 8, 1814. His family soon moved to Tennessee, where he spent his childhood. Being that his father was an educated man, he saw to it that his son was also educated. Green attended Jackson College in [Tennessee](#) and Princeton College in Kentucky. He eventually graduated from the **University of Tennessee**. After graduating, he studied law under his father who was a Supreme Court judge in Tennessee. After a year of legal studies, he left Tennessee to join the Texans in their struggle for independence.

When the 21-year old Tom Green arrived in Texas, he immediately enlisted in the Texas army at Nacogdoches, only a few months before the Battle of San Jacinto. He served under Thomas J. Rusk. At that historic battle, Green helped man one of the "Twin Sisters" artillery pieces.

## The Republic of Texas Years

When the 21-year old Tom Green arrived in Texas, he immediately enlisted in the Texas army at Nacogdoches, as a private. He was considered part of the regular Texas army and took an oath of allegiance to the Republic of Texas.

With the Battle at San Jacinto ended the Texians rejoiced at the victory over both the Mexican army and the capture of the tyrant Santa Anna. Many of the Texas soldiers considered General Houston's treatment of his captive too accommodating considering the ethnic cleansing he performed at Tampico, Goliad and the Alamo. Many of the Texians believed that [Santa Anna](#) needed to be executed for his crimes.

Tom Green led a group of those volunteers on a mission to do something about the situation. While Santa Anna was being held aboard a vessel docked outside the city of Velasco, Green led a group in boarding the ship. Upon encountering Santa Anna, they placed manacles on him and led him ashore while threatening his execution. It was only through the direct intervention of Thomas Rusk and [General Sam Houston](#) that Santa Anna was returned to Republic of Texas officials.

After the Velasco episode, Green returned to Tennessee. While in Tennessee, he received word that as a veteran of the Texas Independence War, he was entitled to land in Texas, so he returned to the Republic of Texas. Since he was one of the most educated men in Texas and well versed in law, he served as clerk for the House of Representatives. Eventually he was elected as Congressional Representative for Fayette County in the Fourth Republic of Texas Congress. While in Congress, he was a big supporter of the Texas Navy.

General Tom Green of Texas

## Trouble with Mexico and Mexican Prison

When trouble with [Mexico](#) or Indians erupted, Tom Green was ready for action. Mexican forces led by the Belgian born Adrian Woll raided San Antonio. In the raid, Woll's force not only occupied the city, they took the whole district court captive. Woll and his Mexican army took the captive judges as hostages with them as they returned back to Mexico. Many in Texas were furious at the raid and how they took Texas citizens hostage. Tom Green was one of those Texians furious at what just happened. The Texians organized a reprisal raid called the Summerville expedition, which Green joined. The expedition was an organized group of volunteers determined to make Mexico pay in retribution what they just did to Texas.

The expedition quickly captured Laredo, and then moved deeper into Mexico. Tom Green left the expedition at that point, yet Thomas Jefferson Green continued on with them. When they reached the town of Mier, there was a major gun battle. The battle involved 260 Texians taking on 2000 Mexican soldiers and militia troops. The Texians ran short of ammunition in the gun battle, which led to them surrendering.

The escapees were forced to participate in what became known as the 'black bean episode'. Since Santa Anna ordered that a number of the men were to be shot, the survivors were forced to choose a bean from a container. Those choosing black beans were the ones to be shot, with the exception of Ewen Cameron, who had organized the jail break. Santa Anna ordered him to be shot irregardless of which bean he chose.

After Texas joined the Union, the Mexican-American War broke out. Tom Green responded to the call for volunteers. He remembered the treatment he and other Texans received in Mexican prison. He raised a company of volunteers and served under Jack Hayes regiment. He participated in the hard fighting that led to the taking of Monterrey. In that battle, the American forces were outnumbered 6200 to 10,000.

For three days American troops attempted taking the fortress, but were unsuccessful.

Finally, Tom Green and a group of 300 Texas Rangers charged the Mexican artillery position on Federacion Hill, guarding the city. The Mexican forces on the hill fled in terror at the sight of the Texans coming at them. Although they had repulsed the attacks of the United States soldiers, the sight of the Texas Rangers coming at them being led by Tom Green terrified them. Many of the Rangers had beards which added to their fearsome countenance.

The next day, Green and his men took the other hill guarding the city. Once the hills were taken, the US army attempted taking the city. Since they were not used to urban warfare, the first attempt failed. The Texas Rangers had experience in urban warfare and instructed the US Army on how it was to be done. Tom Green led an attack on the Mexican forces holding a fortified position at the Bishop's Palace. He organized a feinting move that led the Mexicans to believe the Texas Rangers were retreating. When the Mexican forces saw the Texans fleeing, they opened the gates of their position and poured out, only to find themselves ambushed. Once the Mexican forces were subdued, the city was taken under a flag of truce. Although the city was taken, President Polk was furious at General Zachary Taylor. He lambasted Taylor citing how he had no authority to make truces, only to "kill the enemy".

After the war, Green returned to Texas and married. During that time he served as a clerk for the Supreme Court of Texas.

## **Two Lines from a poem about the Battle of Bourbeau by M.W. Oldham**

*Could I have stood where Tom Green stood amidst the Battle Roar  
I could have seen what he Saw perhaps a little more....*

## **Who was Charles Martel?**

Charles was a Frankish warrior who on **October 10th, 732 AD**, 100 years after the death of Mohammad, defeated an invading Islamic army at the Battle of Tours. For his courage in stopping the invasion he was later named 'martel' (the hammer). History remembers him as Charles Martel. Although called the Battle of Tours, it was fought near Poitiers, France. In some communities, the victory won that day is still celebrated as Charles Martel Day.

## **Texas' Charles Martel**

When fighting broke out in the War of Northern Aggression, Tom Green was again volunteering to fight. He began service with the rank of Colonel. His first assignment was being attached to General Sibley's expedition to New Mexico. While on that campaign Green along with William "Dirty Shirt" Scurry led outnumbered Texas forces in attacks that turned into victories at the Battles of Valverde and Glorieta Pass. With his six foot frame and courage under fire, he inspired his men. Green had proved himself in the eyes of Texans everywhere he served.

At Valverde, Green managed capturing a battery of cannons. Upon capturing them, they were turned around on the Union forces located there. The captured guns were then known as the Valverde Battery and often accompanied Green on his future campaigns. One of the men manning the Valverde battery was a Joseph Sayers, who later became a Governor of Texas.

When Union forces captured Galveston, Texas military commanders once again called on Tom Green to lead men into battle. In the Battle of Galveston, he commanded the sharpshooters and troops stationed on the cottonclads, which allowed the Texans to free [Galveston](#) from occupation.

Green's reputation as a commander led to a group of loyal men serving under him wherever he went. Green's men operated on the assumption that "If Tom said so, then it must be true". They never questioned him, his tactics or his decisions. They followed him without question. His infectious style of leadership was accompanied by a long string of successes. Since he was successful, few commanders questioned him on his way of doing things. It was said that wherever Tom Green's banner was raised, the enemies banner falls. Every Texan knew of Tom Green from the days of Texas Independence, the Mexican War, the Battle of Galveston and the New Mexico campaigns. In each of these engagements, he established himself as a hero. He was a living connection with Texas Independence. He had also been promoted to Brigadier General.

Green was again called upon to lead Texas cavalry troops into action in [Louisiana](#). His leadership and fighting style contributed to success in many battles where his force was outnumbered and out-gunned. His opponents used terms such as 'fox-like' to describe the way he and his command moved through the bayou country and outwitted them. Every time that the Federal forces thought they had him, he found a way to escape from their plans.

He participated in the Battles of [Cox's Plantation](#), Battle of Bourbeau, (also called the Battle of Bordeaux and the Battle of Barbeaux) Bayou LaFourche, Sabine Cross Roads (Mansfield) and Pleasant Hill. In each of these battles, his cavalry proved themselves formidable in their attacks. He was later killed in the fighting at the Battle of Blair's Landing on the Red River.

During the [Battle of Bourbeau](#), William Marlan showed bravery which later earned him the Congressional Medal of Honor. In the battle, the Texas troops under Tom Green surprised the Union forces under General Brunbridge at that location. The Union sentinels were so lax, the Texas troops were able to move to within striking distance by traveling in a ravine to the Union lines. The Texas troops sprung from the ravine and into the Union lines and camp unannounced. The surprise was so sudden, the small force of Texas cavalry and infantry overwhelmed their opponents in the chaos. On overwhelming the Union troops, the Texans turned the captured cannon on its previous owners. William Marlan had the clarity of thought to remove one of the remaining cannon and retreat across a bridge now known as [Marlan's bridge, which is now reported to be haunted](#). Marlan's action earned him the Congressional Medal of honor.

In another engagement, Tom Green, known affectionately to his command as "Pappa" Green attacked a Union gunboat. He had his men position the Valverde battery and open fire on the gunboat Diana. The well-trained gunners accompanied by sharpshooters routinely hit their target, leaving holes in the superstructure, forcing all the sailors off the decks and pinning the captain below deck. The captain soon surrendered his vessel to Tom Green and his cavalry.

In his final battle, Tom Green had the Valverde battery set up again. This time at Blair landing, he took on three union ships, including an ironclad and a gunboat. After two hours of fighting a cannon ball fatally struck Green in the head. At that point, his command went wild with grief at losing their commander. The grief stricken men were in a state of shock. Leander McNeely (who was later a renowned Texas Ranger), managed to lead them out of harm's way in their grief stricken state.

Due to his outstanding performance and leadership, at keeping invasions from reaching Texas, Governor **Pendleton Murrah** referred to Tom Green as Texas's "[Charles Martel](#)". Whenever threats to Texas arose, Tom Green responded to that threat.

Green's commander in Louisiana, General **Richard Taylor** said of Green, he was "*upright, modest, and with the simplicity of a child, danger seemed to be his element, and he rejoiced in combat... His death was a public calamity and mourned as such by the people of Texas and Louisiana.*"

Tom Green County in Texas is named in his honor. He was buried in the Texas State Cemetery in Austin. For many years, Texas school children learned of Tom Green, and studied the Battle of Bourbeau since he defeated a force much larger than himself in that engagement.

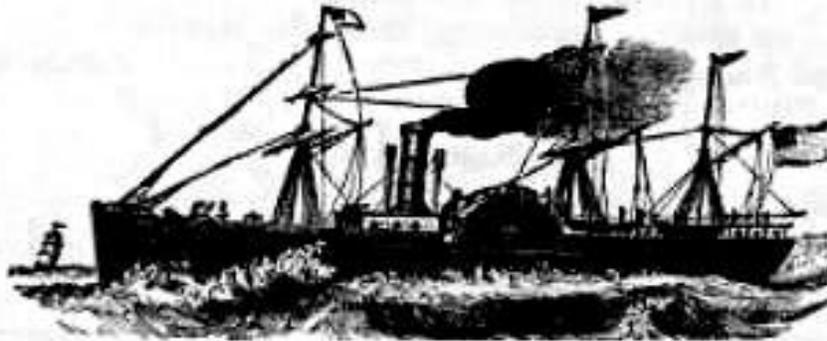
## OCEAN AND INLAND TRANSPORTATION

Between all parts of Europe and all parts  
of the United States.

### THE AMERICAN EMIGRANT COMPANY

Is now prepared to transport under its care Passengers to and  
from Europe in the cheapest manner, and with the most careful  
regard to comfort and safety, either by steam or sailing ship.

Among the **STEAMSHIPS** employed by them are  
the following well-known vessels :



**Kangaroo,**  
**Edinburgh,**  
**City of Limerick,**  
**City of Baltimore,**  
**City of Cork,**  
**City of Washington,**  
**City of London,**  
**City of Paris, (now building,)**  
**City of Boston,**  
**City of New York,**  
**City of Manchester,**  
**City of Dublin,**

<b>Washington,</b>	<b>Saxonia,</b>	<b>England,</b>
<b>Lafayette,</b>	<b>Tentonia,</b>	<b>Scotland,</b>
<b>Europe,</b>	<b>Queen,</b>	<b>Borussia,</b>
<b>Britannia,</b>	<b>Helvetia,</b>	<b>Bavaria,</b>
<b>Caledonia,</b>	<b>Erin,</b>	<b>Atalanta,</b>
<b>Hibernia,</b>	<b>Pennsylvania,</b>	<b>America,</b>
<b>Germania,</b>	<b>Virginia,</b>	<b>New York,</b>
<b>Allemania,</b>	<b>Louisiana,</b>	<b>Bremen,</b>
	<b>North American.</b>	

Lincoln used the American Emigration Company to deliver boatloads of new conscripts from Germany and European to plunder and kill Americans in the South.

The total social disorganization of the Southern States, and the inevitable pressing demand which has suddenly arisen for an immense supply of white labor, render it a matter of the deepest national importance that effective efforts should be made at once to procure it; the more so, as all thoughtful men concur in the conviction that the true method of reconstruction is the infusion into the exhausted system of the South of the fresh blood of vigorous free emigrants from the Northern States and Europe.

Sequence 15 of 76

Above is a post war statement.

Das Sechste Senatorial-District  
Regiment,  
**PERKIN'S RIFLES,**  
Oberst W. Mayer.



Hauptquartier: 46 & 48 East Houston Str.

Eine seltene Gelegenheit für activen Dienst!

Dieses Regiment wird gesucht für

**General Sigel**

ausgeworben und von den tüchtigsten Offizieren commandirt.

Wünsche bei Besichtigung des Regiments? Bitte an den Officier, der es zu sein wünscht! Bitte bei Besichtigung bei Major bei Besichtigung zu erwirken!

Bitte auch keine Besichtigung ohne vorherige Erlaubnis, welche durch den Officier zu erlangen ist, und welche bei Besichtigung bei Major zu erwirken ist.

**Bounties und Unterstützungen**

erhalten bei der Einschreibung.

**Bezahlung, Rationen und Verpflegung**

vom Tage der Einschreibung.

Rekrutierungs-Officer.

Before conscription in 1862, the American Emigration Company enticed northern soldier recruits right off the gangplank with free (Indian) land for veterans.

(H/T) to James Skelton

Despite General Joe Johnston's capitulation in May 1865, the War Between the States still raged until 1877 when Northern troops finally were withdrawn in exchange for the unopposed ascendance of "His Fraudulency," President Rutherford B. Hayes. General Wade Hampton argued below that surrendering to the North in 1865 would not preclude further suffering of the Southern people.

Bernhard Thuersam, Chairman

North Carolina War Between the States Sesquicentennial Commission

**"Unsurpassed Valor, Courage and Devotion to Liberty"**

[www.ncwbts150.com](http://www.ncwbts150.com)

*"The Official Website of the North Carolina WBTS Sesquicentennial"*

## **"No Evil Can Equal a Return to Federal Control"**

"On April 19, Hampton, seeking a way to avoid surrender of a remnant of the Confederate forces, wrote a letter to [President Jefferson] Davis:

*"My Dear Sir: Having seen the terms upon which it is proposed to negotiate [for capitulation], I trust that I may be pardoned for writing to you in relation to them . . . There are now not less than 40,000 to 50,000 men in arms on this side of the Mississippi [River]. On the other side are many more . . . If we keep any organization, however small in the field we give Europe the opportunity of aiding us. The main reason urged for negotiation is to spare the infliction of any further suffering on the people.*

*Nothing can be more fallacious than this reasoning. No suffering which can be inflicted by the passage over the [Confederacy] of the [Federal] armies can equal what would fall on us if we return to [Federal control]. We shall have to pay the debt incurred by the [Federal Government] in this [invasion], and we shall live under a base and vulgar tyranny. No sacrifice would be too great to escape this train of horrors, and I think it far better for us to fight to the extreme limit of [the Confederacy], rather than to reconstruct the [Southern States] upon any terms.*

*If I had 20,000 mounted men here I could force Sherman to retreat in twenty days. Give me a good force of cavalry and I will take them across the Mississippi [River] – and if you desire me to go in that direction it will give me great pleasure to escort you. I am sorry that we paused to negotiate, for to my apprehension, no evil can equal that of a return to [Federal control]. If you allow me to do so, I can bring to your support many men strong arms and brave hearts – Men who will fight to Texas, and will seek refuge in Mexico, rather than in the [conquered States]. Very Respectively Yours, Wade Hampton."*

Hampton wrote a second letter to Jeff Davis on April 22, making the same plea, and adding, "Wish to see you as soon as convenient." On April 22 Hampton and [General] Joe Wheeler traveled to Charlotte by train. Biographer Edward Longacre would describe the meeting:

*"The President and his generals thrashed out the details of the [plan Hampton had proposed, which Wheeler supported and which the President viewed as the only way to keep alive the dream of Southern (States) independence. Late in the afternoon, when Hampton and Wheeler left to rejoin their commands, they carried authorization from Davis to form an escort not only by recruiting volunteers, but by impressing horses, weapons and other needed resources."*

(Bloodstains, Volume 4, Political Reconstruction and the Struggle for Healing, Howard Ray White, Howard Ray White Publishing, 2012, pp. 34-35)

# Secession—Not Just Southern and Not Just Secular

10/08/2014

by Al Benson Jr.



*Often when the issue of secession has been “historically” dealt with it has been done in such a manner as to give the impression that it was purely a Southern political phenomenon. Clearly our present establishment “historians” love to have it so. As usual, there is a little more to the story than what they are pleased to tell us.*

*Lots of people other than Southerners, in years gone by, admitted the right of secession in this country. Well-known anti-slavery American jurist Joseph Story admitted the right of a state to withdraw from the Union. Judge Story stated: “The obvious deductions which may be, and indeed have been drawn, from considering the Constitution as a Compact between the States, are, that it operates as a mere treaty, or convention between them, and has an obligatory force upon each State no longer that it suits its pleasures, or its consent continues;...and that each State retains the power to withdraw from the Confederacy, and to dissolve the connection, when such shall be its choice;...” So it would seem that Judge Story thus admitted the right of a state to secede.*

*Thomas Jefferson believed in the right of state secession, and, according to Alexander H. Stephens, the Kentucky Resolutions fully established this.*

*Even ultra-nationalist Alexander Hamilton was forced, by his own admission, to admit that the right of state secession existed. In regard to Hamilton, Alexander Stephens, who was named after him, wrote: "Even Mr. Hamilton must have believed that this right was incident to the systems; for in his urgent appeals to Mr. Jefferson, as early as 1790, for his influence with members of Congress, in aid of the bill for the assumption of the States debts, he presented the strong reason, that if the measure should not pass, there was great danger of a secession of the members from the creditor States, which would end in 'a separation of the States.'...he was Secretary of the Treasury. Would he have urged such an argument if he had not believed that those States had a right to withdraw?" That's an interesting question that those nationalists today of the Hamilton stripe might consider addressing themselves to—then again, maybe not.*

*And William Rawle, U.S. District Attorney under George Washington, said: "The Union is an association of the people of Republics; its preservation is calculated to depend on the preservation of those republics...It depends on the State itself, to retain or abolish the principle of representation; because it depends on itself, whether it will continue a member of the Union. To deny this right, would be inconsistent with the principles on which all our political systems are founded;..."*

*Even DeToqueville addressed the secession question. He had stated: "The Union was formed by the voluntary agreement of the States; and these, in uniting together, have not forfeited their Nationality, nor have they been reduced to the condition of one and the same people. If one of the States chose to withdraw its name from the contract, it would be difficult to disprove its right of doing so,..."*

*Even Utopian socialist Horace Greeley, no real friend of the South, said that: "The right to secede may be a revolutionary one, but it exists nonetheless;...We hope never to live in a Republic whereof one section is pinned to the residue by bayonets." It could be that Mr. Greeley didn't really understand the motives of Abraham Lincoln, who had, himself, recognized the right of secession in early 1848—conveniently, just before the onslaught of the socialist revolts in Europe! Again, for more about that read Lincoln's Marxists.*

*Just before, and during, the War of Northern Aggression, the sentiment in favor of secession came from other areas of the country and not just from below Mason-Dixon.*

*In Douglas County, Illinois a meeting was held which announced that: "We regard the Emancipation Proclamation...as the entering wedge which will ultimately divide the middle and northwestern states from our mischief-making, puritanical, fanatical New England brethren..." Culturally, this has happened, even though Lincoln's "mystical Union" has been held together with bayonets.*

*In Brown County, Indiana, a gathering was convened that put forth this sentiment: "...Our interests and inclinations will demand of us a withdrawal from political association in a common government with the New England states, who have contributed so much to every innovation upon the Constitution to our present calamity of civil war, and whose tariff legislation must ever prove oppressive to our agricultural and commercial pursuits." Mind you, such secession sentiments are coming forth from Indiana and Illinois.*

*Other sources have cited secession sentiment in even the Middle Atlantic states—New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Delaware and Maryland. Author William C. Wright has written that: "The secession movement was prominent in the five Middle Atlantic states. Within these five states were three types of secessionists; first, those who wanted to join the Confederacy; second, those who wished to form a central confederacy, that is, to join with the other border states and divide the United States into three separate nations; third, those who preferred to let the South go in peace rather than to use force to save the Union."*

*Wright noted that Pennsylvania was the most pro-Union of these states, while New Jersey had strong economic and social ties with the South. New York was divided between the up-state region which supported the Union and the Hudson Valley and New York City areas that had ties to the South. New York City Mayor Fernando Wood had even made the proposition that New York City be made into a "free city." Wright has duly noted that: "Together, the advocates of secession weakened the Lincoln administration's ability to react to the Confederacy. At the same time, they offered the South hope of Northern support if war broke out." In view of this, one might be led to wonder if this situation was the real reason for Lincoln's actions in regard to Fort Sumter. I might also question why almost none of this type of material is ever presented in our "history" books, if such they can seriously be called. But that would be little more than a rhetorical exercise because I already know why.*

*The majority of people today, North and South, largely due to the abolitionist propaganda presented in our "history" books (whoever said history books had to teach real history?) and the rampant apostasy in the country as a whole, have viewed secession and the War of Northern Aggression in a strictly secular light. Many who have*

*studied history will readily admit to the political and economic causes of the War, though some continue to persist it was all about slavery. However, most will not touch the theological reasons for secession.*

*However, there were many in the South that viewed secession in the same light that they viewed the biblical separation spoken of in Second Corinthians 6:14-18. They looked at an increasingly apostate and “progressive” North, while, in the main, most Southerners clung to orthodox Christianity. Informed Southerners watched much of the Northern clergy, no doubt influenced by the taint of Unitarianism, seek to deify man and to exalt the goodness of his human nature and his “free will.” It was the same sort of thing they did with abolitionist/terrorist John Brown in 1859 where Northern Unitarians claimed that Brown’s gallows was equal to Christ’s cross.*

*The late Professor M. E. Bradford, writing in the Southern Partisan magazine for the fourth quarter of 1991, noted that: “...Professor Bell Wiley observes, the Southern churches had always warned their communicants against ‘extreme confidence in human endeavor.’ The ordinary Southerner of 1860 did not approach the world as did those who had voted for Mr. Lincoln. They were...’as dubious of human ability in social and political matters as in the matter of salvation.’ The belief of the sovereignty of God and dependence of man was the whole of their thinking.”*

*In regard to Southern clergymen, Professor Bradford wrote: “Because most Southern clergymen were, during the years of sectional conflict within their denominations, convinced that apostasy and infidelity had become the dominant religions of the North.” You know something? They were right! Bradford observed that: “As the War approached, these (Southern) clergymen more and more tended to view the sectional controversy as a dispute between those who acknowledged the authority of the Scripture and those who set their own moral sense above it—in other words, between Christians and infidels.”*

*Thus we have another, seldom acknowledged, yet perhaps the most important dimension to the secession question—the spiritual and theological dimension. The majority probably have no interest in dealing with this aspect of the question. The “history” they’ve been taught tells them not to, but the spiritual dimension was and is here and needs to be dealt with. As someone with a Christian worldview, I believe all truth is educational and all things, ultimately, reflect someone’s theology. Everything eventually comes down to this—choose who you will serve, the Trinitarian God of the Scriptures or the World System. It has to be one or the other. Many Southern secessionists held to this view. For them, although political issues were prominent as were economic ones, their ultimate view of secession was a theological view. They viewed the doctrine of biblical separation and secession as one. In our apostate day, such a conclusion merits our serious consideration.*

#### Bibliography

##### ***A Constitutional View of the Late War Between the States***

by Alexander H. Stephens (volume one)  
Krause Reprint Company, New York, 1970

##### ***Democracy in America***

by Alexis de Tocqueville (volume one)  
Vintage Books, New York, July, 1990

##### ***The Hidden Civil War***

by Wood Gray  
Viking Press, New York, 1942

##### ***The Secession Movement in the Middle Atlantic States***

by William C. Wright  
Associated University Presses, Inc. Cranberry, New Jersey, copyright 1973

##### ***A Theological and Political View of the Doctrine of Secession***

*by Al Benson Jr.*

*The Copperhead Chronicle, Sterlington, Louisiana, copyright 1995, reprinted 2009  
(booklet 30 pages)*

<http://www.deovindice.org/1/post/2014/10/secessionnot-just-southern-and-not-justsecular.html>

# The Hampton Roads Peace Conference During the War Between the States

By John V. Denson

Most establishment historians today might as well be the Orwellian historians writing for the Ministry of Truth in George Orwell's novel [1984](#), especially in relation to the War Between the States. They rarely, if ever, mention the Hampton Roads Peace Conference which occurred in February of 1865, because it brings into question most of the mythology promoted today which states that Lincoln and the North fought the war for the purpose of abolishing slavery and the South fought for the purpose of protecting it, and therefore, it was a great and noble war.

The story of the peace conference is related by a participant who was vice-president of the Confederacy, Alexander H. Stephens, in volume two of his work entitled [A Constitutional View of the War Between the States: Its Causes, Character, Conduct and Results](#), at pages 589 through 625.

The story begins in early January of 1865 which was before Sherman left Savannah on his march through the Carolinas. Mr. Francis P. Blair, Sr., instigated the conference by obtaining President Lincoln's permission to contact Confederate President, Jefferson Davis, concerning a possible temporary halt in the war. Mr. Blair was closely connected to the Lincoln administration and he was concerned about the efforts on the part of the French to establish a military presence in Mexico in order to help them reconquer the territory that had been lost in the war with America. Mr. Blair made his proposal to President Jefferson Davis that a secret military conference take place and that all hostility cease between the North and South for the purpose of letting the American army enforce the Monroe Doctrine by directing all of its efforts to evicting the French from Mexico, thereby stopping any assault by the Mexicans on the southwest corner of America. President Lincoln gave his permission to Mr. Blair to talk with Jefferson Davis but indicated to him that he did not endorse Mr. Blair's ideas; however, he would not stand in the way of some military conference to discuss peace terms and to stop hostilities while the conference was in session. Jefferson Davis listened to Mr. Blair's proposal, met with his cabinet and it was decided that three delegates were to be appointed to meet with President Lincoln and his Secretary of State, William Seward. The three Confederate delegates were Mr. Stephens, John Campbell, a former U.S. Supreme Court Justice from Alabama, and a Mr. R. M. T. Hunter, a member of the Confederate Senate. The Confederate delegates were given safe passage through Northern lines and met directly with General Grant, who put them on a boat to go to Fortress Monroe. When they reached Fortress Monroe near Hampton Roads, Virginia, they were then escorted to another steamer where President Lincoln and Mr. Seward were to meet with them. The actual meeting occurred on February 3, 1865.

Mr. Seward indicated that this was to be an informal conference with no writing or record to be made, all was to be verbal, and the Confederates agreed. President Lincoln announced in the beginning that the trip of Mr. Blair was approved by him but that he did not endorse the idea to halt the hostilities for the purpose of the American army going to Mexico to enforce the Monroe Doctrine; however, he had no objection to discussing a peace offer at this time. President Lincoln stated that he had always been willing to discuss a peace offer as long as the first condition was met and that would be for the Confederacy to pledge to rejoin the Union. If that condition was agreed upon then they could discuss any other details that were necessary. Mr. Stephens responded by suggesting that if they could come up with some proposal to stop the hostilities, which might lead to the restoration of the Union without further bloodshed, would it not be advisable to act on that proposal, even without an absolute pledge of ultimate restoration being

required at the beginning? President Lincoln replied firmly that there would be no stopping of the military operations unless there was a pledge first by the Confederacy to rejoin the Union immediately.

Judge Campbell then asked what would be the terms offered to the South if they were to pledge to rejoin the Union and how would they be taken back into the Union. Since there was no immediate response by either President Lincoln or Mr. Seward, Vice-President Stephens stated that it would be worthwhile to pursue stopping the hostilities to have a cooling off period so that the peace terms might be investigated without the passions of the war. Mr. Stephens indicated that should the hostilities stop for some extended period of time, he felt that there would be a good chance that many of the states would rejoin the Union on the same terms as they had when they joined in the beginning, but that the sovereignty of the states would have to be recognized upon rejoining the Union. Mr. Seward objected that a system of government founded upon the right of secession would not last and that self-preservation of the Union was a first law of nature which applies to nations as well as to individuals. He brought up the point that if all the states were free to secede, they might make a treaty with some foreign nation and thus expose the Union to foreign aggression. Mr. Stephens responded that the principle of self-preservation also applied to every state by itself and it would never be in the interest of any single state or several states to join with some foreign power against those states which remained in the Union.

Mr. Hunter then brought up the question of whether President Lincoln would require the Confederate army to join with the Union army to go to war in Mexico and stated before Lincoln answered that it was the view of all three commissioners that the Confederates would never agree to join with the Union army in an invasion of Mexico. Both President Lincoln and Mr. Seward responded that the feeling was so strong in the North to enforce the Monroe Doctrine, that they felt that the South would not be needed in the invasion.

The subject of slavery then came up and Mr. Stephens asked President Lincoln what would be the status of the slave population in the Confederate states, and especially what effect the Emancipation Proclamation would have if the Confederates rejoined the Union. President Lincoln responded that the Proclamation was only a war measure and as soon as the war ceased, it would have no operation for the future. It was his opinion that the Courts would decide that the slaves who were emancipated under the Proclamation would remain free but those who were not emancipated during the war would remain in slavery. Mr. Seward pointed out that only about two hundred thousand (200,000) slaves had come under the operation of the Proclamation and this would be a small number out of the total. Mr. Seward then brought up the point that several days before the meeting, there had been a proposed 13th constitutional amendment to cause the immediate abolition of slavery throughout the United States, but if the war were to cease and the Confederates rejoined the Union, they would have enough votes to kill the amendment. He stated that there would be thirty-six (36) states and ten (10) could defeat the amendment. The reader should be reminded at this point that President Lincoln, in his Inaugural Address before the war, gave his support to the first 13th amendment pending at that time which would have explicitly protected slavery where it already existed.

Mr. Stephens then inquired as to what would be status of the states in regard to their representation in Congress and President Lincoln replied that they would have their full rights restored under the Constitution. This would mean that there would be no punishment or reconstruction imposed. President Lincoln then returned to the slavery question and stated that it was never his intention to interfere with slavery in the states where it already existed and he would not have done so during the war, except that it became a military necessity. He had always been in favor of prohibiting the extension of slavery into the territories but never thought immediate emancipation in the states where it already existed was practical.

He thought there would be "many evils attending" the immediate ending of slavery in those states. Judge Campbell then asked Mr. Seward if he thought there would be good race relations in the South upon immediate emancipation and inquired about what would happen to the freed slaves. President Lincoln responded by telling an anecdote about an Illinois farmer and how he avoided any effort in finding food for his hogs, and his method would apply to the freed slaves, in other words "let'em root!" The Confederate delegation showed no interest in protecting slavery in the Confederacy with their only interest being independence from the Union and the protection of the right to secede, which raised the subject of West Virginia. Mr. Hunter asked President Lincoln whether West Virginia, which had seceded from the State of Virginia, would be allowed to remain a separate state and President Lincoln stated that it would. Lincoln had once been a strong proponent of secession, and as a first-term congressman from Illinois, he spoke in a session of the House of Representatives in 1848 and argued that:

"Any people anywhere, being inclined and having the power, have the right to rise up and shake off the existing government and form a new one that suits them better. This is a most valuable and most sacred right, a right which we hope and believe is to liberate the world." (emphasis supplied).

Lincoln recognized the right of West Virginia to secede but refused to recognize the right of the South to secede. Mr. Hunter indicated that President Lincoln's proposal amounted to an unconditional surrender but Mr. Seward responded that the North would not be conquerors but rather the states would merely have to recognize national authority and the execution of the national laws. The South would regain full protection of the Constitution like the rest of the states.

President Lincoln returned to the question of slavery stating that he thought the North would be willing to be taxed to compensate the Southern people for the loss of their slaves. He said that he had many conversations to the effect that if there was a voluntary abolition of slavery the American government would pay a fair indemnity and specified that four hundred million dollars (\$400,000,000) would probably be appropriated for this purpose. Mr. Seward said that the Northern people were weary of the war and they would be willing to pay this amount of indemnity rather than continuing to pay for the war.

Mr. Stephens wrote that the entire conversation took about four hours and the last subject was the possible exchange of prisoners. President Lincoln stated he would put that question in the hands of General Grant and they could discuss it with Grant as they left. Finally, Mr. Stephens asked President Lincoln to reconsider stopping the hostilities for a period of time so that the respective sides could "cool off," and while cooling off, investigate further possibilities for ending the war other than by simply having the South pledge to rejoin the Union. President Lincoln stated he would reconsider it but he did not think his mind would change on that point. Thus, ended the Peace Conference and the Confederates returned to meet with General Grant and were escorted back to the Confederate lines.

In summary, the South wanted independence, not the protection of slavery, and the North wanted reunion rather than abolition of slavery. This is what President Lincoln had stated in the very beginning before the war and again what he had stated near the end of the war.

It was generally recognized in both the North and the South by 1865 that slavery was a dying institution, not just in America, but throughout Western Civilization. It was also obvious to both the North and the South that slavery would be hard to maintain in a separate Confederate South without the constitutional and statutory fugitive slave provisions which had required free states to return escaped slaves. In fact, many abolitionists had advocated Northern secession before the war as a means to end slavery by depriving the Southern states of the benefits of the fugitive slave clause in the Constitution and the laws relating thereto. The offer of the North to pay for the freed slaves was merely an added inducement to

rejoin the Union but Lincoln had always been willing to accept slavery where it already existed if the South would remain in, or later, rejoin the Union. The right of a state to secede clearly had been accepted in the North and the South at the time of the formation of the Union and up until the time of the War Between the States. For example, the New England states frequently asserted the right of secession and threatened to use it on five occasions: in 1803 because of President Jefferson's Louisiana Purchase; in 1807 over the Embargo Act; in 1812 over the admission of Louisiana as a state; in 1814 at the Hartford Convention because of the War of 1812; and finally, in 1845 over the annexation of Texas.

If the agricultural South rejoined the industrial North, they would again be subject to economic exploitation of the protective tariff, which was paid primarily by the South and was by far the main tax to operate the central government in Washington, D.C. The North, due to their increased representation in Congress, was able to control where the money was spent, which was primarily for internal improvements in the North, a practice the South considered unconstitutional. The protective tariff and internal improvements had been two of the key problems between the two sections since 1828, along with the general disagreement about the size and power of the central government in Washington.

Finally, in order to bring into clear focus the significance of the Hampton Roads Conference, it should be recalled that on April 4, 1861, before the start of the war on April 12, the Secession Convention in Virginia, which had convened in February of 1861, sent a delegate to visit President Lincoln in the White House to discuss the results of the action recently taken in Virginia. When the State of Virginia originally voted on its ratification ordinance approving the U.S. Constitution, it contained a specific clause protecting their right to secede in the future. The delegate was Colonel John B. Baldwin, who was a strong opponent of secession by Virginia, although he recognized the right. His message communicated privately to the president on April 4, was that the convention had voted not to secede if President Lincoln would issue a written pledge to refrain from the use of force in order to get the seceded states back into the Union. President Lincoln told Colonel Baldwin that it was four days too late now to take that action. Unknown to all except a few insiders of the administration, meaning that members of the Congress did not know, the president had already issued secret orders on April 1, to send a fleet of ships to Fort Sumter in order to provoke the South into firing the first shot in order to start the war. (For more details see my chapter "Lincoln and the First Shot: A Study of Deceit and Deception" in the book *Reassessing the Presidency*.) Lincoln stated that he could not wait until the seceded states decided what to do and added:

"But what am I to do in the meantime with those men at Montgomery? Am I to let them go on?"

Baldwin replied:

"Yes sir, until they can be peaceably brought back."

Lincoln then replied:

"And open Charleston, etc., as ports of entry, with their ten percent tariff . . ." (as opposed to the much higher forty percent Federal tariff). "What then would become of my tariff?" (For more details on this meeting and a subsequent meeting with President Lincoln by other delegates of the Virginia Secession Convention, again see my chapter "Lincoln and the First Shot")

The original Constitution, still in effect before the war, prohibited all "direct" taxes on the people, i.e. income, estate, gift, etc., so almost all the revenue to operate the Federal government in Washington was derived from an "indirect" tax on imports. The South, being agricultural, had to import almost all manufactured goods from Europe (primarily England) or buy the products from the North. The higher the

tax on imports, the more protection the North got to raise its prices for its manufactured goods and for this reason a high import tax was called a "protective tariff." As long as, the import tax was ten percent or less it was classified as a "revenue tax" to which the South did not object. In fact, the new Confederate Constitution adopted in March of 1861, placed a maximum tax on imports of ten percent. However, when an import tax or tariff exceeded ten percent, it became known as a "protective tariff" for the protection of domestic (Northern) industry. Shortly before the war, the Chicago Daily Times was only one of many newspapers predicting a calamity for federal revenue and business in the North if the South was allowed to secede with its ten percent limit on import taxes which would attract trade, especially from abroad, to the South rather than the North. In an editorial it stated:

"In one single blow our [Northern] foreign commerce must be reduced to less than one-half what it now is. Our coastwise trade will pass into other hands . . . We should lose our trade with the South, with all of its immense profits. Our manufactories will be in utter ruins. Let the South adopt the free-trade system, or that of a tariff for revenue (ten percent or less), and these results would likely follow."

In a debate in England, two notable British citizens, Charles Dickens and John Stuart Mill, took opposing views on the cause of the American War Between the States with Mill stating that the purpose of the war was the abolition of slavery and Dickens maintained that "The Northern onslaught upon slavery was no more than a piece of specious humbug designed to conceal its desire for economic control of the Southern states."

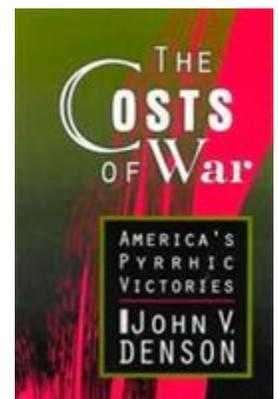
The meeting at Hampton Roads in 1865 and the meeting with Colonel Baldwin in 1861 both showed that President Lincoln's concern was preventing the secession of the South in order to protect Northern manufacturers and to retain the tax source for the Federal government. The abolition of slavery was not the purpose of the war. In his Inaugural Address he promised he would invade the South for the purpose of collecting taxes and recovering the forts but he would support the first 13th amendment which protected slavery in the states where it already existed.

The War Between the States was not a noble war to abolish slavery, but instead was a war of conquest to require the Southern states to continue paying the taxes which paid for the federal government and to change the system of government given to us by our Founders and instead replace it with a strong national government thereby removing most of the political power from the states and the people. When the famous British historian, Lord Acton, wrote to Robert E. Lee after the war, in a letter dated November 4, 1866, he inquired about Lee's assessment of the meaning of the war and the result that would follow. Lord Acton's letter stated, in part, that:

"I saw in State Rights the only availing check upon the absolutism of the sovereign will, and secession filled me with hope, not as the destruction but as the redemption of Democracy . . . Therefore I deemed that you were fighting the battles of our liberty, our progress, and our civilization; and I mourn for the stake which was lost at Richmond more deeply than I rejoice over that which was saved at Waterloo."

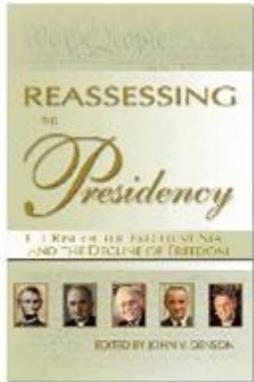
Lee replied in a letter dated December 15, 1866, and stated, in part, what the result would be:

". . . [T]he consolidation of the states into one vast republic, sure to be aggressive abroad and despotic at home, will be the certain precursor of the ruin which has overwhelmed all those that have preceded it." (emphasis supplied).



Never have truer words ever been written or spoken.

Rarely do any governments, or the politicians, intellectuals and news media who support their wars, tell the truth about the real motives for the wars. After all, the citizens must be convinced either that their safety is being protected from an aggressor or that the war serves some noble purpose, because it's the citizens who fight, die and pay the taxes. The Orwellian historians have falsified the true purposes or motives behind most of America's wars, and have instead given us glorified accounts designed to mislead the public in order to justify the sacrifices the people have made. All wars, whether won or lost, tend to centralize and increase the power into the national government, increase the debts and taxes and diminish the civil liberties of the citizens. It is time we begin to see through the myths and false propaganda about American wars so that we can prevent future wars. Americans have a strong tendency to accept as true the false wartime propaganda which now appears in the history books and which is repeated by politicians and intellectuals to the effect that all of America's wars have been just, necessary and noble. This tendency of the Americans to accept this false propaganda tends to prevent them from questioning the alleged reasons for current wars. There is also a strong tendency by Americans to measure a person's patriotism by how much that person supports an American war rather than how much the person supports the concept of American freedom and the ideas of our Founders, which includes a noninterventionist foreign policy



It is time that Americans learn the truth about the real reasons behind our wars, and particularly, the War Between the States, because of the price that we have paid in the long-term loss of liberty in that war. The deaths of over 600,000 American young men in that war is not exactly inconsequential. This high death total is more than the total of all the deaths of American soldiers in all the other wars America has fought. The Hampton Roads Peace Conference is a necessary piece to the puzzle of learning that truth.

The abolition of slavery by the 13th amendment was a great step forward in the struggle for individual freedom and it eliminated a horrible evil in America which had been practiced for centuries throughout the world, but the passage of that amendment was not the purpose of the war and slavery would certainly have died soon without a war as it did elsewhere throughout Western Civilization without wars. It is the War Between the States which was the first great turning point in American history away from the system of government and the individual freedom that our Founders provided for us. We need a new "Reformation and Renaissance," but this time, it needs to be about government, especially the American government. We need a new "turning point" to go in the right direction to recover the original ideas about individual freedom advocated by our Founders before it is too late; or have we already passed the point of no return?



January 10, 2006

John V. Denson [[send him mail](#)] is the editor of two books, [The Costs of War](#) and [Reassessing the Presidency](#). In the latter work, he has chapters especially relevant for today, on how Lincoln and FDR lied us into war.

# Sam Davis Youth Ball a huge success!



The Sam Davis New Year's Ball held at the Museum for East Texas Culture in Palestine on January 10th was a big success. The proceeds from this event fund scholarships for youth attending the SCV Sam Davis Youth Camp. The silent and live auction did very well. I very much appreciate the SCV camps who were represented here in support of this effort. Past Louisiana Division commander Ted Brode and his wife Phyllis attended from West Monroe, LA, 10th Texas Brigade Commander Bill Maddox, East Texas Brigade 2nd Lt. Cmdr. Roger Doyle and his wife Judy - Capt. Jesse Amason Camp, David Lowry (String Bean - blacksmith) of the Maj. W. H. "Howdy" Martin Camp was the auctioneer, Jan Giles one of the Howdy Martin Camp ladies took care of the very nice table of food and refreshments, Dan Dyer Adjutant of the John H. Reagan Camp and director of the Museum for East Texas Culture and others. The Davis-Reagan Chapter 2292 UDC president Dollye Jeffus attended along with other members of their chapter. The print donated by artist John Paul Strain and the beautiful ball dress donated by Sue's Creations was auctioned and both did very well. Many other donated silent auction items did well too. The 3rd Texas String band did an outstanding job with the period music and my wife Deborah, who organizes this event each year, did another wonderful job. Everyone there had a great time!!! I hope more can attend this fun event, which supports a very good cause, next year.



**This picture is of 39 men that were ordered to be executed by Abraham Lincoln for treaty violations (hunting off of their assigned reservation) Yes the "Great Emancipator" as the history books so fondly referred to him as. Authorities in Minnesota asked President Lincoln to order the immediate execution of all 303 Indian males found guilty. Lincoln was concerned with how this would play with the Europeans, whom he was afraid were about to enter the war on the side of the South. He offered the following compromise to the politicians of Minnesota: They would pare the list of those to be hung down to 39. In return, Lincoln promised to kill or remove every Indian from the state and provide Minnesota with 2 million dollars in federal funds. So, on December 26, 1862, the "Great Emancipator" ordered the largest mass execution in American History, where the guilt of those to be executed was entirely in doubt. Regardless of how Lincoln defenders seek to play this, it was nothing more than murder to obtain the land of the Santee Sioux and to appease his political cronies in Minnesota. You have no idea the things that are hidden from you with the textbooks assigned to you as a child by your government. Stay mindful people, be aware....in the age of information being ignorant is indeed a choice.**

# State Convention

**Friday June 5 - Sunday June 7, 2015**



COURTESY: CITY OF TEMPLE

**Frank W. Mayborn Convention Center  
3303 N. 2nd Street Temple, TX**

**Host: Camp 1250 Major Robert M. White Temple, Texas**

**[2015 Texas Division Convention Promotion](#)**

**[2015 Texas Division Convention Registration](#)**

**[2015 Texas Division Convention Hotel Information](#)**

**[2015 Texas Division Convention Credentials Form](#)**

**[2015 Texas Division Convention Vendor Registration Form](#)**

**[2015 Texas Division Convention Ad Purchase Form](#)**

**[2015 Texas Division Convention Ad Prices and Sizes](#)**

**[2015 Texas Division Convention Ancestor Memorials For Program](#)**

**2015 Texas Division Convention Schedule  
Coming Soon**

Help Further the Happiness  
of a Southern Child.

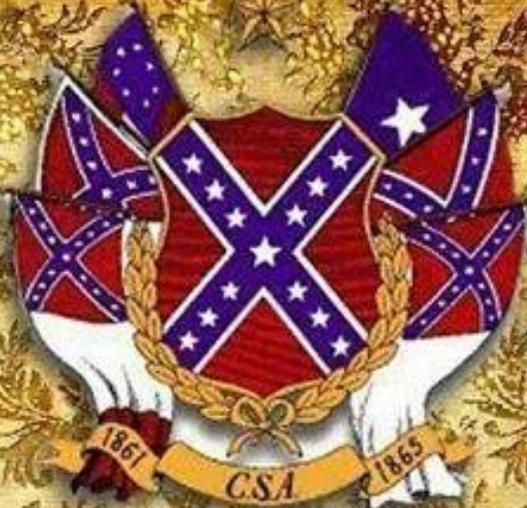
Donate Scholarships TODAY!

Sam Davis Youth Camp

Clifton TX / Thaxton VA

[samdavis.scv.org](http://samdavis.scv.org)

**Send your kids to Sam Davis Youth Camps!**



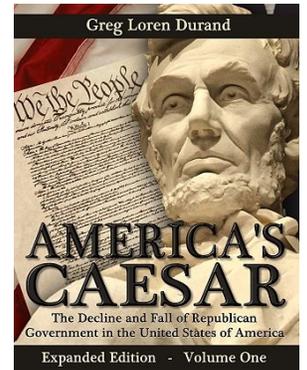
**"The time for compromise  
has now passed, and the South is  
determined to maintain her position,  
and make all who  
oppose her smell Southern  
powder and feel Southern steel!"  
--Jefferson Davis**

Purchase this outstanding book [here](#).



A Series.....

Belo Herald is proud to present AMERICA'S CAESAR. Each month, a new chapter of this excellent treatise will be presented. This benchmark work can be purchased at the link above. It is a must for every Southron to own.



## CHAPTER TWENTY-FIVE: The Cold War in the United States

---

### Americans Are a Subjugated People

The basic institution of constitutional dictatorship of an executive nature is *martial rule*.... Martial rule is an emergency device designed for use in the crises of invasion or rebellion. It may be most precisely defined as an extension of military government to the civilian population, the substitution of the will of a military commander for the will of the people's elected government.... [I]t means military dictatorship – government by the army, courts-martial, suspension of civil liberties, and the whole range of dictatorial action of an executive nature.... Martial rule and executive lawmaking are both marked by a correlative technique or characteristic of constitutional dictatorship, *the government invasion of political or economic liberties*. The crisis expansion of power is generally matched by a crisis contraction of liberty [emphasis in original].<sup>11</sup>

In a very real sense, the non-flagrant war against the American people begun during the Reconstruction period in the mid-1860s and continued in the early 1930s is still being waged today. In light of what has been documented in this book, it should be obvious that efforts to "preserve our rights" via constitutional arguments in the courts, or by electing "the right man" to office, or asserting State sovereignty under the Tenth Amendment, or creating new political parties, are all a futile waste of valuable time and resources. As stated by William Whiting, "While war is raging, many of the rights held sacred by the *Constitution* – rights which cannot be violated by any acts of

Congress — may and must be suspended and held in abeyance,<sup>(12)</sup> and "*None of these rights, guaranteed to peaceful citizens, by the Constitution belong to them after they have become belligerents against their own government*"[emphasis in original].<sup>(13)</sup> The constitutional protection of property against confiscation "without due process of law"<sup>(14)</sup> is now non-existent within the United States because "nothing in the *Constitution* interferes with the belligerent right of confiscation of enemy property,"<sup>(15)</sup> and "no judicial process is necessary to give the government full title thereto...."<sup>(16)</sup> According to the laws of war, "the property of persons residing in the enemy's country is deemed, in law, hostile, and subject to condemnation without any evidence as to the opinions or predilections of the owner"<sup>(17)</sup> and "the title to such real property remains in abeyance during military occupation, and until the conquest is made complete."<sup>(18)</sup> In the words of William Birkhimer, "The government of military occupation has complete control of lands and immovable property of the enemy in the occupied district. The fruits, rents, and profits issuing therefrom are therefore under the control of that government, whose officials may lawfully claim and receive them."<sup>(19)</sup> Consequently, a report commissioned by the U.S. Senate in 1933 declared, "The ultimate ownership of all property is in the State; individual so-called 'ownership' is only by virtue of Government, *i.e.* law, amounting to mere user; and use must be in accordance with law [public policy] and subordinate to the necessities of the State."<sup>(20)</sup> Furthermore, since "a victorious army appropriates all public money,"<sup>(21)</sup> the wealth of the people has also been seized and substituted with "legal tender" paper instruments of exchange, known today as Federal Reserve Notes, which completely lack any backing in gold or silver.

The right of the people of the several States to govern themselves has been superseded by a perpetual state of declared national emergency which "confers upon the government... the right to seize and hold conquered territory by military forces, and of instituting and maintaining military government over it, thereby suspending in part, or in whole, the ordinary civil administration,"<sup>(22)</sup> the functions of which "cease under martial law, or continue only with the sanction, or, if deemed necessary, the participation of the occupier or invader."<sup>(23)</sup> The presence of "a military commander in a district which is the theatre of war" is a public notice to the effect that "the laws of war apply to that district," and "by the laws of war, an invaded country has all its laws and municipal institutions swept by the board, and martial law takes the place of them."<sup>(24)</sup> To put it simply, the republican form of government guaranteed to the several States by Article IV, Section 4 of the *Constitution* is denied to them under the laws of conquest. According to the Supreme Court in *Dooley v. U.S.*, "We therefore do not look to the constitution or political institutions of the conqueror for authority to establish a government for the territory of the enemy in his possession, during its military occupation, nor for the rules by which the powers of such government are regulated and limited. Such authority and such rules are derived directly from the laws of war."<sup>(25)</sup>

Because "martial law affects chiefly the police and collection of public revenue and taxes,"<sup>(26)</sup> the various "law enforcement" agencies within the States, Counties, and Cities serve to "police" military districts, insuring that "public policy" is obeyed by all within their respective jurisdictions, and collecting reparations from offenders.<sup>(27)</sup> That public policy is not really law at all is seen in the following definition: "Public policy is a variable quantity; it must and does vary with the habits, capacities, and opportunities of the public."<sup>(28)</sup> When the public capacity is that of subjugation to an occupying military force, public policy can only be interpreted as the exercise of an unlimited police power against a conquered people. As pointed out by F. Harold Essert in 1933:

The police power of the state has been called the "dark continent" of American constitutional law, and rightly so, for this section of the law is the most vague and difficult to define of all over the courts have labored. To attempt to convey a true concept of its nature and its limitations involves many problems.... The power is, and must be from its nature, incapable of any very exact definition or limitation, for it is that function of government which has for its direct and primary purpose the promotion of public welfare through the means of compulsion and restraint over private rights. Who shall say what constitutes the public welfare? Who shall say where the limits of compulsion and restraint should end? As each tomorrow shall offer different social, political, and economic conditions, so there shall be a totally different interpretation of the police power for each circumstance....<sup>(29)</sup>

The chilling reality of Essert's description of an unlimited Executive police power is seen in the Ninety-Third Congress' admission that such power "originates in the individual will of the President and represents an exercise of authority without law. No one, perhaps not even the President, knows the limits of the power he may seek to exert in this instance and the parties affected cannot learn the limit of their rights."<sup>(30)</sup> Furthermore, "no person [Executive agent] shall be held liable in any court for or in respect to anything done or omitted in good faith in

connection with the administration of, or in pursuance of" the declared state of national emergency.<sup>(21)</sup> Those found within the venue of the Fourteenth Amendment and who are thus "subject to the jurisdiction of the United States," have nothing at all with which to shield themselves from "an enormous – seemingly expanding and never-ending – range of emergency powers."<sup>(22)</sup> Hence, they are taxed in their enjoyment of what would normally be constitutionally protected rights, such as travel, labor, ownership of property, inheritance, marriage, and so forth. It is not a coincidence that the Bureau of Internal Revenue, which became the Internal Revenue Service in 1953, was birthed by the Lincoln Administration in 1862 when the whole country had been placed under martial law. Although the collection of a direct tax from the people of the several States without apportionment is prohibited in the *Constitution*,<sup>(23)</sup> no such provision applies to the collection of taxes from those who have either lost their citizenship by conquest or have voluntarily surrendered the same through their own negligence:

Enforced contributions from the enemy are equally authorized whether required during the progress of the war for the sustenance and transportation of the conqueror's army, or after the conclusion thereof, as one of the terms of peace....

Those upon whom contributions are levied during the progress of war are not the armies of the enemy.... They are, as a rule, non-combatants, peaceable citizens, and corporations, all of whom the demands of the times have thrown into financial straits.<sup>(24)</sup>

Viewed in this light, the so-called Sixteenth Amendment does indeed legally establish the income tax, its dubious "ratification" and the complaints of the "tax protest movement" notwithstanding.<sup>(25)</sup> In the words of Charles Edward Merriam, "Under this [police] power it is possible to take the most of a man's income, and to do it in a perfectly legal manner."<sup>(26)</sup>

Licenses are also required for all commercial activity because "all intercourse between the territories occupied by belligerent armies, whether by traffic, by letter, by travel, or in any other way, ceases," except "according to agreement approved by the government, or by the highest military authority [the Commander-in-Chief]."<sup>(27)</sup> The Government's definition of what constitutes "intercourse" is quite exhaustive:

The question of what is commerce is to be approached both affirmatively and negatively, that is, from the points of view as to what it includes and what it excludes. While commerce includes trade, traffic, the purchase, sale, or exchange of commodities, and the transportation of persons or property, whether on land or water or through the air, according to various definitions of the term, and according to judicial exposition apart from formal definitions, nevertheless commerce is broader than, and is not limited to trade, transportation, or the purchase, sale, or exchange of goods or commodities.

Commerce is more than any one of these things in that it is intercourse. The terms "commerce," "interstate commerce," and "commerce among the states" or "commerce among the several states," embrace business and commercial intercourse in any and all of its forms and branches and all its component parts between citizens of different states, and may embrace purely social intercourse between citizens of different states, as over the telephone, telegraph, or radio, or the mere passage of persons from one state to another for social intercourse and traffic, but also the subject matter thereof, which may be either things, goods, chattels, merchandise, or persons.<sup>(28)</sup>

Commenting on the *Trading With the Enemy Act*, the U.S. Senate likewise stated in its *Senate Report 113*:

The trade or commerce regulated or prohibited is defined in Subsections (a), (b), (c), (d) and (e), page 4. This trade covers almost every imaginable transaction, and is forbidden and made unlawful except when allowed under the form of licenses issued by the Secretary of Commerce (p. 4, sec. 3, line 18). This authorization of trading under licenses constitutes the principal modification of the rule of international law forbidding trade between the citizens of belligerents, for the power to grant such licenses, and therefore exemption from the operation of law, is given by the bill.

To this end, "military commanders under such circumstances [are] sometimes led to assume a licensing authority."<sup>(29)</sup> To find out for themselves whether or not they are considered to be the enemy by the U.S. Government, Americans need look no further than their own wallets for the evidence.

## The Suspension of Lawful Courts

According to the *Lieber Code*, which was originally promulgated in 1863 under Lincoln's direction as General Orders No. 100, "Whenever feasible, martial law is carried out in cases of individual offenders by military courts.... Military jurisdiction is of two kinds: first, that which is conferred and defined by statute; second, that

which is derived from the common law of war.... In the armies of the United States the first is exercised by courts-martial...."<sup>(30)</sup> In the 1867 case *Hefferman v. Porter* it was likewise declared:

The right of a military occupant to govern, implies the right to determine in what manner, and through what agency.... The municipal laws of the place may be left in operation, or suspended, and others enforced. The administration of justice, may be left in the hands of the ordinary officers of the law; or these may be suspended, and others appointed in their place. Civil rights and civil remedies may be suspended, and military laws and courts and proceedings, may be substituted for them, or new legal remedies and civil proceedings, may be introduced.<sup>(31)</sup>

More recently, the U.S. Supreme Court declared:

The jurisdiction of United States courts-martial is limited to serving in the armed forces, certain categories of reserve and retired personnel, prisoners of war... and persons employed by or accompanying the armed forces beyond the continental limits of the United States of America. Nevertheless, where martial law has been declared and the privilege of the writ of *habeas corpus* suspended, any civilian may find himself amenable to trial not before the regular civil courts, but by the order of or under regulations promulgated by a military commander, by one of a miscellany of *ad hoc* tribunals composed of officers of the armed services and usually designated as provost courts, military commissions, or military boards....<sup>(32)</sup>

Likewise, the *Law of Land Warfare* manual states:

...[I]n practice, offenders who are not subject to the *Uniform Code of Military Justice* but who by the law of war are subject to trial by military tribunals, are tried by military commissions, provost courts, or other forms of military tribunals.

In areas occupied by United States forces, military jurisdiction over individuals, other than members of the Armed Forces, who are charged with violating legislation or orders of the occupant is usually exercised by military government courts. Although sometimes designated by other names, these tribunals are actually military commissions. They sit in and for the occupied area and thus exercise their jurisdiction on a territorial basis.<sup>(33)</sup>

The gold-fringed military flag which was carried by the Army of the Potomac during its war against the Southern people now stands in American courtrooms as a public proclamation of the military occupation and government of the former States. The spearhead finial is used in the traffic and justice (provost) courts, in which the summary trials proceed upon charges and specifications rather than an indictment. The eagle finial is used in the larger civil courts which are organized under the authority of the President in times of national emergency or when the normal courts of the States are closed.<sup>(34)</sup> Both of these are courts-martial of the occupying power, not lawful courts of the State. For those tempted to think that the gold fringe is mere decoration, the following quote is provided:

From a military standpoint flags are of two classes, those flown from stationary masts over army posts, and those carried by troops in formation. The former are referred to by the general name flags. The latter are called colors when carried by mounted troops. Colors and standards are... made of silk with a knotted fringe of yellow on three sides.

Use of the flag. The most general and appropriate use of the flag is as a symbol of authority and power.<sup>(35)</sup>

Elsewhere, we are told that, "within the discretion of the President as Commander-in-Chief of the Army and Navy,"<sup>(36)</sup> the gold-fringed United States flag is "flown indoors, only in military courtrooms" and "[d]isplay or use of flags, guidons, and streamers or replicas thereof, including those presently or formerly carried by U.S. Army units, by other than the office, individual, or organization for which authorized, is prohibited except [by]... [r]ecognized United States Army division associations...."<sup>(37)</sup> It is very clear that the display or use of a military flag outside a military venue is strictly prohibited.

It is commonly asserted within the so-called Patriot movement that the gold-fringe indicates admiralty jurisdiction. However, courts which hear cases of admiralty jurisdiction fall within the venue of Article III of the *Constitution* and are therefore part of the constitutional function of the Judicial Branch of the Government, whereas "Military courts are not Article III courts but agencies established pursuant to Article I."<sup>(38)</sup> The origin of these courts can be located in the unconstitutional Acts of the Reconstruction period, and as such, they exist solely to enforce the "appropriate legislation" and "military jurisdiction" of those Acts – in other words, the "Rules concerning Captures on Land and Water."<sup>(39)</sup>

## Remedy is Denied to the People



The arbitrary nature of the present-day legal system as the mere collection of war reparations from the conquered enemies of the U.S. Government is further evident from the following: "New administrative undertakings of the war and post-war years introduced the National Government permanently into fresh areas of activity. Among these [was]... in 1870 [during Reconstruction] the creation, under the Attorney-General, of a Department of Justice to supervise from Washington the activities of the United States attorneys in the field."<sup>(40)</sup> "In the field" is defined as "[a]ny place, on land or water, apart from permanent cantonments or fortifications, where military operations are being conducted."<sup>(41)</sup> Furthermore, according to the *Uniform Code of Military Justice Act* of 5 May 1950, "The words 'in the field' imply military operations with a view to an enemy..., and it has been said that in view of the technical and common acceptance of the term, the question of whether an armed force is 'in the field' is not to be determined by the activity in which it may be engaged at any particular time...."<sup>(42)</sup> It is not surprising, therefore, to find that all other administrative workers who are employed or commissioned by the Government to collect reparations from its citizens or otherwise monitor

and regulate their activities, such as Internal Revenue, Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco, and Firearms (BATF), or Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI)<sup>(43)</sup> agents, are also referred to as "agents in the field."

That this is what is really going on in the courts is kept hidden from the ignorant public by the illusion of jury trials. As noted in a previous chapter, Lincoln had justified the removal of the courts from their constitutional foundation by an appeal to "necessity" and the "public welfare" – both of which he reserved the right to define himself. He even ordered the arrest of the Chief Justice of the Supreme Court for opposing his policies. Consequently, the judge which presides in such courts is seated at the pleasure of the Executive police power and since he is bound only by what is deemed to be beneficial to the public welfare, he may overturn a jury's verdict as he pleases. The old constitutional doctrine of jury nullification cannot co-exist with such an arbitrary system because the jury members no longer take the law with them into the courtroom, but instead have it delivered to them from the mouth of the judge, who decides what it shall be as the necessity of the moment or his own personal discretion dictates.<sup>(44)</sup> Since panel members must be "U.S. citizens" under the Fourteenth Amendment (themselves "completely subject" to all the codes and regulations arising therefrom) and they are carefully screened to weed out those who may hold political or religious views contrary to the purpose of the court-martial (*i.e.* those who still believe the *Constitution* to be "the supreme law of the land" will rarely make it through this screening process to sit on a panel), it is impossible for the accused to be guaranteed a trial by "an impartial jury" as stated in the Sixth Amendment.<sup>(45)</sup> Consequently, the presence of a jury in a court-martial is nothing more than a formality, for the guiding force there are the "principles of public policy as distinguished from the common law."<sup>(46)</sup> Elsewhere, we read:

...[T]he courts are selected from among the ranks of men filled with the spirit of the times. We are certain to find the *Constitution* a growing and expanding instrument. For that very reason it is a living and not a dead *Constitution*. By suiting itself to different times and circumstances it lives.

So, too, the police power must continue to be elastic – capable of development – as economic, social, and political conditions vary. Therefore the rule of precedent, *Stare Decisis*, is not a sufficient basis upon which to judge the present-day meaning of this term, nor the extent of its scope.<sup>(47)</sup>

We must not overlook the above admission: modern American courts have rejected *stare decisis*, which simply means that they are not bound "to abide by, or adhere to, decided cases."<sup>(48)</sup> This malady of capriciousness extends even to the Supreme Court, which, as evidenced by Lincoln's utter contempt for the Court of his day and

by Roosevelt's "court packing" in the 1930s, has little function under an Executive dictatorship other than "a fairly harmless observer of the emergency activities of the President...."<sup>(49)</sup> J. Millard of the Washington State supreme court commented:

The Supreme Court of the United States has "rendered it impossible for the practicing lawyer to advise his client as to what the law is today, or even to offer a guess as to what it will be tomorrow...." The court repeatedly has overruled decisions, precedents and landmarks of the law of long standing without assigning any valid reason therefore, dismissing the question with a wave of the hand, and contenting itself with the assertion that these precedents have been eroded by the processes of the years; or basing its decision on casuistry and sophistry rather than by logic.... By this conduct [the court] has subjected itself to the suspicion, widely held, that it speaks, or undertakes to speak, in the voice of the appointing [Executive] power, rather than by the voice of the law.<sup>(50)</sup>

The American people have been duped into placing their trust in a legal profession which is impotent to even inform them "what the law is today," much less to shield them from the abuses of a government freed from all constitutional restraint. To say that there is no remedy in the courts for a people subjected to military occupation would be an understatement. According to the *Manual for Courts Martial*, an "act of war" exists "in virtually every act conceivable by any person, against which the United States Government has made a law, rule, or regulation."<sup>(51)</sup> As we have seen above in the admissions of the Ninety-Third Congress, the codes, rules, and regulations promulgated by Congress under the direction of the President acting as Commander-in-Chief are so voluminous that it is impossible for any "U.S. citizen" to understand, much less to comply with them at all times. Of course, it is not intended for the citizens to do so; indeed, the very existence of the "system" depends upon "criminal activity" to carry on its "war on crime," its "war on drugs," its "war on poverty," its "war on terror," or any other artificial war or national emergency that is concocted by the current Administration to justify the continued derogation of constitutional rights.

According to the laws of war, the military authority in an occupied country has the right "to search by day or night the homes of citizens.... to order the surrender of arms and stores, and to proceed to search and seize them; [and] to prohibit publications and meetings that it judges to be of a nature tending to incite and maintain disorder."<sup>(52)</sup> The military siege and subsequent summary execution without a trial of over eighty men, women, and children in Waco, Texas in 1993 was a brazen exercise of the President's assumed power under martial law to wage war against belligerent citizens, as are the many other examples of Executive tyranny which have occurred with increasing frequency in our day. It is time that Americans wake up and face the truth that the "land of the free" is a thing of the past, and that the celebration sanctioned by the United States Government each year on the Fourth of July is not the independence of the people, but its own "new birth of freedom" from the "chains" of the *Constitution* which was won for it by the "father" of the "new nation" – Abraham Lincoln.

## The American Republic is Dead

In 1987, Thurgood Marshall, the first Black Supreme Court Justice, made this admission:

...I do not believe that the meaning of the *Constitution* was forever "fixed" at the Philadelphia Convention. Nor do I find the wisdom, foresight, and sense of justice exhibited by the Framers particularly profound. To the contrary, the government they devised was defective from the start, requiring several amendments, a civil war, and momentous social transformation to attain the system of constitutional government, and its respect for the individual freedoms and human rights, we hold as fundamental today. When contemporary Americans cite "The Constitution," they invoke a concept that is vastly different from what the Framers barely began to construct two centuries ago....

While the Union survived the civil war, the *Constitution* did not. In its place arose a new, more promising basis for justice and equality, the 14th Amendment, ensuring protection of the life, liberty, and property of all persons against deprivations without due process, and guaranteeing equal protection of the laws.<sup>(53)</sup>

Even more revealing is the following statement by George P. Fletcher:

The "original republic" – the one for which our "forefathers" fought "face to face – hand to hand" – exists only in the minds of academics and fundamentalist patriots. The republic created in 1789 is long gone. It died with 600,000 Americans killed in the Civil War. That conflict decided once and forever that the People and the States do not have the power to govern their local lives apart

from the nation as a whole. The People have no power either to secede as states or to abolish the national government.

The new *Constitution* — the one that shapes and guides the national government and disturbs the new patriots to their core — begins to take hold in the Gettysburg Address, in which Lincoln skips over the original *Constitution* and reconstitutes it according to the principles of equality articulated in the *Declaration of Independence*. This short speech functions as the Preamble to a new charter that crystalizes after the war in the Thirteenth, Fourteenth, and Fifteenth Amendments. The Gettysburg Address signals the beginning of a new *Constitution*. The language is so familiar that we do not realize the implicit transformation.<sup>(54)</sup>

It is important to note that Fletcher is not someone who can be easily dismissed as an "anti-government, right-wing extremist," but is a Law Professor at Columbia University and the author of several books and over sixty major articles on criminal law, comparative law, torts, and jurisprudence. It was also not a mere metaphor when Fletcher referred to "the new *Constitution*" as distinguished from the "original *Constitution*." As he stated in the article quoted above, "the new *Constitution*" is founded in the Reconstruction "amendments," which were nothing more than war measures used to establish a "new jurisdiction" — "U.S. citizenship" — which can be regulated and taxed without limitation in order to prop up the debt-ridden Federal behemoth. Back in the early Nineteenth Century, the able and respected jurist William Rawle warned the American people of the dangers of departing from a written and permanent constitution as the security of their rights:

It is not necessary that a constitution should be in writing; but the superior advantages of one reduced to writing over those which rest on traditionary information, or which are to be collected from the acts and proceedings of the government itself, are great and manifest. A dependence on the latter is indeed destructive of one main object of a constitution, which is to check and restrain governors. If the people can only refer to the acts and proceedings of the government to ascertain their own rights, it is obvious, that as every such act may introduce a new principle, there can be no stability in the government. The order of things is inverted; what ought to be the inferior, is placed above that which should be the superior, and the legislature is enabled to alter the constitution at its pleasure.

This is admitted by English jurists to be the case in respect to their own constitution, which in all its vital parts may be changed by an act of parliament; that is, the king, lords, and commons may, if they think proper, abrogate and repeal any existing laws, and pass any new laws in direct opposition to that which the people contemplate and revere as their ancient constitution. No such laws can be resisted or disobeyed by the subject, nor declared void by their courts of justice as unconstitutional. A written constitution which may be enforced by the judges and appealed to by the people, is therefore most conducive to their happiness and safety.<sup>(55)</sup>

With this in mind, we can see why "public servants" and "law enforcement officers" remain unimpressed when informed by "Patriots," "sovereign state Citizens," "Christian Coalitions," or any other political faction or party, that they have acted "unconstitutionally." The oath sworn by these men is to "support and defend the *Constitution* of the United States against all enemies, foreign and domestic." This is no longer "the original *Constitution*" — the written document ratified by the several States for their own general welfare, now declared to be a "dead constitution" — but the ever-growing and ever-changing mass of codes, rules, regulations, Executive Orders, international treaties (e.g. N.A.F.T.A., G.A.T.T., the United Nations charter, etc.) that have their basis in military law, not the Common Law.

## **A Bankrupt Corporation is Owned By its Creditors**

We have seen very clear evidence that by 1933, the U.S. Government was completely bankrupt. This was openly declared in 1934 by Representative William Lemke of North Dakota:

This nation is bankrupt; every State in this Union is bankrupt; the people of the United States, as a whole, are bankrupt. The public and private debts of this Nation, which are evidenced by bonds, mortgages, notes, or other written instruments amount to about \$250,000,000,000, and it is estimated that there is about \$50,000,000,000 of which there is no record, making in all about \$300,000,000,000 of public and private debts. The total physical cash value of all the property in the United States is now estimated at about \$70,000,000,000.

That is more than it would bring if sold at public auction. In this we do not include debts or the evidence of debts, such as bonds, mortgages, and so forth. These are not physical property. They will have to be paid out of the physical property. How are we going to pay \$300,000,000,000 with only \$70,000,000,000?<sup>(56)</sup>

Representative McFadden believed that this bankruptcy was caused by "the corrupt and dishonest Federal Reserve," but the roots of the problem, though certainly exasperated by the passage of the *Federal Reserve Act* of 1913, actually go back much further in American history. The U.S. Treasury had been bankrupt in 1861 and it is impossible to believe that a protracted and costly war of four years' duration could have improved the situation at all. According to the candid admission of Representative James Trafficant, Jr. of Ohio in 1993, "We are now in chapter 11 [bankruptcy]" and those who write and pass the laws in this country are merely "official trustees presiding over the greatest reorganization of any bankrupt entity in world history, the U.S. Government."<sup>(57)</sup> The importance of this statement must not be missed:

The debtor rehabilitation provisions of the [Bankruptcy] Code (Chapters 11, 12 and 13) differ, however, from the straight bankruptcy in that the debtor looks to rehabilitation and reorganization, rather than liquidation, and the creditor looks to future earnings of the bankrupt, rather than property held by the bankrupt to satisfy their claims....

When a debtor business entity realizes it will become insolvent or will be unable to pay its debts as they mature, it can petition for reorganization under Chapter 11 of the Bankruptcy Code. The debtor business normally is permitted to continue its operations under court supervision until some plan of reorganization is approved by two-thirds of the creditors.<sup>(58)</sup>

The "future earnings of the bankrupt" can be none other than the future earnings of the American people and their posterity collected by the Government through taxation. Furthermore, a "bankruptcy trustee" is a "person appointed by the Bankruptcy Court to take charge of the debtor estate, [and] to collect assets...."<sup>(59)</sup> Are we to conclude, then, that our supposed representatives in Congress are nothing more than collection agents? One thing that can be stated with certainty is that a bankrupt corporation, which is considered *civiliter mortuus* ("civilly dead"), can make no law, enter no contract, or do anything other than what its creditors will allow.<sup>(60)</sup> As mentioned before, it is "public policy" that is the "law" being enforced in America today in order to promote "public safety" – the "public" being, not the American people, but the bondholders, corporations and big business interests, and ultimately, the international bankers behind the Federal Reserve system who control the President, the Congress, and the entire judicial system, through the national debt created by the Lincoln Administration and legalized by the Fourteenth Amendment. If it was impossible for the combined debt of the country in 1934, which totaled between \$250 and \$300 billion, to be paid even if all property owned by every citizen had been sold at auction, how is it possible that the current debt of nearly \$8 trillion<sup>(61)</sup> can be paid when there is no longer any property to be sold? Every "dollar" in the pocket of every American is owned by the Federal Reserve, and thus every piece of property, every stock, every asset, and every service which has been purchased with such "money" is likewise owned by the Federal Reserve. A more complete slavery could not be imagined.

This is all anything but a conspiracy which only the John Birch Society has uncovered, since it has had full and open disclosure in the public record for the past one-hundred and forty years – and yet the American people go about their daily lives for the most part unconcerned about their own condition, and even contributing with patriotic zeal to further their own oppression. Rather than enjoying the "more perfect Union" envisioned by our forefathers, it is obvious that we, their posterity, are instead living examples of the effectiveness of the primary weapon of conquest – deception:

...[A]llow them [the conquered] to live under their own laws, taking tribute of them, and creating within the country a government composed of a few who will keep it friendly to you.... A city used to liberty can be more easily held by means of its citizens than in any other way....

...[T]hey must at least retain the semblance of the old forms; so that it may seem to the people that there has been no change in the institutions, even though in fact they are entirely different from the old ones. For the great majority of mankind are satisfied with appearances, as though they were realities, and are often even more influenced by the things that seem than by those that are.... [The conqueror should] not wish that the people... should have occasion to regret the loss of any of their old customs....<sup>(62)</sup>

---

## Endnotes

1. Rossiter, *Constitutional Dictatorship*, pages 9-10.
2. Whiting, *War Powers of the President*, page 59.
3. Whiting, *op. cit.*, page 51.
4. U.S. Constitution, Fifth Amendment.
5. Whiting, *War Powers of the President*, page 52.
6. Whiting, *op. cit.*, page 54.
7. Whiting, *op. cit.*, page 57.
8. Francis Lieber, LL.D., *Instructions for the Government of Armies of the United States in the Field* (Gen. Orders No. 100, Adjutant-General's Office, 1863), Section II, Clause 31.
9. Birkhimer, *Military Government*, pages 191-192.
10. George Cyrus Thorpe, *Contracts Payable in Gold* (Washington, D.C.: Government Printing Office, 1933; Senate Document No. 43).
11. Lieber, *Instructions for Armies in the Field*, Section II, Clause 31.
12. Whiting, *War Powers of the President*, pages 54-55.
13. Lieber, *Instructions for Armies in the Field*, Section I, Clause 6.
14. John Quincy Adams, speech delivered in the United States House of Representatives, 14 and 15 April 1842; quoted by Whiting, *War Powers of the President*, page 80.
15. *Dooley v. U.S.* (1901), 182 U.S. 222.
16. Lieber, *Instructions for Armies in the Field*, Section I, Clause 10., Section I, Clause 10.
17. It is significant to note that the Federal Law Enforcement Training Center is under the U.S. Department of the Treasury, rather than the Department of Justice.
18. 38 Ch. Div. 359; *Chaffee v. Farmer's Co-Op Elevator Co.*, 93 N.D. 585, 168 N.W. 616, 618.
19. F. Harold Essert, essay: "What is Meant By the 'Police Power'?" *Nebraska Law Bulletin* (Lincoln, Nebraska: College of Law, The University of Nebraska, 1933), Volume XII, page 208.
20. U.S. Supreme Court Justice Jackson, quoted by U.S. Senate, "Introduction," *Emergency Powers Statutes*, page 14.
21. U.S. Senate, *ibid.*
22. U.S. Senate, *ibid.*
23. U.S. Constitution, Article I, Section 2, Clause 3.
24. Birkhimer, *Military Government*, pages 204, 207. The reader should take special note of the term "enforced contributions" in this quote. One of the taxes levied against employees within the United States – the Social Security tax – originated in the *Federal Insurance Contribution Act* (F.I.C.A.).
25. Bill Benson and M.J. Beckman, *The Law That Never Was: The Fraud of the Sixteenth Amendment and Personal Income Tax* (South Holland, Illinois: Constitutional Research Association, 1985). In 1986, the "never ratified" arguments of Benson and Beckman were examined by the 7th Circuit Court and dismissed as frivolous. The ruling of *U.S. v. Thomas* stated in part: Benson and Beckman did not discover anything; they rediscovered something that Secretary Knox considered in 1913. Thirty-eight states ratified the sixteenth amendment, and thirty-seven sent formal instruments of ratification to the Secretary of State. (Minnesota notified the Secretary orally, and additional states ratified later; we consider only those Secretary Knox considered.) Only four instruments repeat the language of the sixteenth amendment exactly as Congress approved it. The others contain errors of diction, capitalization, punctuation, and spelling. The text Congress transmitted to the states was: "The Congress shall have power to lay and collect taxes on incomes, from whatever source derived, without apportionment among the several States, and without regard to any census or enumeration."  
Many of the instruments neglected to capitalize "States," and some capitalized other words instead. The instrument from Illinois had "remuneration" in place of "enumeration"; the instrument from Missouri substituted "levy" for "lay"; the instrument from Washington had "income" not "incomes"; others made similar blunders.  
Thomas insists that because the states did not approve exactly the same text, the amendment did not go into effect. Secretary Knox considered this argument. The Solicitor of the Department of State drew up a list of the errors in the instruments and – taking into account both the triviality of the deviations and the treatment of earlier amendments that had experienced more substantial problems – advised the Secretary that he was authorized to declare the amendment adopted. The Secretary did so.  
Although Thomas urges us to take the view of several state courts that only agreement on the literal text may make a legal document effective, the Supreme Court follows the "enrolled bill rule." If a legislative document is authenticated in regular form by the appropriate officials, the court treats that document as properly adopted. *Field v. Clark*, 143 U.S. 649, 36 L.Ed. 294, 12 S.Ct. 495 (1892). The principle is equally applicable to constitutional amendments. See *Leser v. Garnett*, 258 U.S. 130, 66 L.Ed. 505, 42 S.Ct. 217 (1922), which treats as conclusive the declaration of the Secretary of State that the nineteenth amendment had been adopted. In *United States v. Foster*, 789 F.2d. 457, 462-463, n.6 (7th Cir. 1986), we relied on *Leser*, as well as the inconsequential nature of the objections in the face of the 73-year acceptance of the effectiveness of the sixteenth amendment, to reject a claim similar to Thomas's. See also *Coleman v. Miller*, 307 U.S. 433, 83 L. Ed. 1385, 59 S. Ct. 972 (1939) (questions about ratification of amendments may be nonjusticiable). Secretary Knox declared that enough states had ratified the sixteenth amendment. The Secretary's decision is not transparently defective. We need not decide when, if ever, such a decision may be reviewed in order to know that Secretary Knox's decision is now beyond review (*U.S. v. Thomas*, 788 F.2d 1253).

- The fact that arguments based on the supposed defects of the ratification of the Sixteenth Amendment have been ruled frivolous and the matter declared to be "beyond review" has not deterred the countless "gurus" in the so-called "patriot" movement from continuing to extract exorbitant fees from their gullible followers for their "untax" schemes.
26. Charles Edward Merriam, *The Written Constitution and the Unwritten Attitude* (New York: Richard R. Smith, Inc., 1931), page 14.
  27. Lieber, *Instructions for Armies in the Field*, Section V, Clause 86.
  28. Arnold G. Ginnow and Milorad Nikolic (editors), *Corpus Juris Secundum* (St. Paul, Minnesota: West Publishing Company, 1988), Volume XV, pages 383-385.
  29. Birkhimer, *Military Government*, pages 277-278.
  30. Lieber, *Instructions for Armies in the Field*, Section I, Clauses 12-13.
  31. *Hefferman v. Porter* (1867), 6 Coldw. (46 Tenn.) 391.
  32. *Duncan v. Kahanamoku* (1946), 327 U.S. 304.
  33. *The Law of Land Warfare: Army Field Manual 27-10* (Washington, D.C.: Government Printing Office, 1983 O-381-647 [5724]), page 11.
  34. *United States Army Regulations* (Washington, D.C.: Government Printing Office, 1 October 1979; AR 840-10), Chapter 8.
  35. Henry Suzzallo, Ph.D., Sc.D., LL.D. (editor), *The National Encyclopedia* (New York: P.F. Collier and Son Corporation, 1944), Volume IV, page 326.
  36. 34 Ops. Atty. Gen. 483.
  37. *Army Regulations*, Chapter 2. This flag also appears as a shoulder patch on law enforcement uniforms, even those of police at the municipal (city) level – additional evidence that such men are agents of the occupying military force rather than the servants of the people, as is commonly believed.
  38. U.S. Senate, "The War Power," *The Constitution of the United States: An Analysis and Interpretation* (U.S. Senate Document No. 92-82, Ninety-Second Congress, Second Session; Washington, D.C.: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1972), page 334.
  39. *U.S. Constitution*, Article I, Section 8, Clause 11.
  40. U.S. Government, *Report of the Commission of Intergovernmental Relations* (Washington, D.C.: Government Printing Office, 1955), pages 24-25.
  41. *Ex parte Gerlach* (D.C.) 247 F. 616, 617; *Ex parte Jochen* (D.C.) 257 F. 200, 205; *Ex parte Mikell* (D.C.) 253 F. 817, 819; *Hines v. Mikell* (C.C.A.) 259 F. 28, 30.
  42. *Uniform Code of Military Justice Act*, 5 May 1950; *Statutes at Large*, Volume LXIV, page 108; Title 50 *United States Code*, Sections 551-736.
  43. In its 1973 report, the U.S. Senate wrote the following: "Another pertinent question among many, that the Special Committee's work has revealed, concerns the statutory authority for domestic surveillance by the FBI. According to some experts, the authority for domestic surveillance appears to be based upon an Executive Order issued by President Roosevelt during an emergency period. If it is correct that no firm statutory authority exists, then it is reasonable to suggest that the appropriate committees enact proper statutory authority for the FBI with adequate provision for oversight by Congress" (page 10). Thus, as late as the 1970s, the FBI did not even have a statutory basis for its existence. This was yet another example of Congress' *ex post facto* rubber-stamping the unconstitutional activities of the Executive branch during a contrived national emergency.
  44. "[I]f the judge's opinion in matter of law must rule the issue of fact submitted to the jury, the trial by jury would be useless" (*Sparf v. United States* [1895] 156 U.S. 51).
  45. According to Patrick Henry, a man's peers are "those who reside near him, his neighbors, and who are well acquainted with his character and situation in life" (Elliott, *Debates in the Several State Conventions*, Volume III, page 579).
  46. *Prize Cases* (1862), 2 Black, 674.
  47. Essert, "Police Power," pages 214-215.
  48. *Black's Law Dictionary* (Sixth Edition), page 1406.
  49. Rossiter, *Constitutional Dictatorship*, page 264.
  50. J. Millard, dissenting opinion in *Southwest Washington Production Credit Assn. v. Fender* (1944) 21 Wash. 2d 349, 363-364.
  51. *Manual for Courts Martial*, page IV-4, Article 104(C)(6)(c). The offenses that may be committed by a civilian, which are classified as "Acts of War," cover one hundred and twenty-five pages in this manual.
  52. *Laws Regarding the State of Siege of 9th August, 1849*, Chapter III, Article IX.
  53. Thurgood Marshall, [bicentennial speech](#) given at Maui, Hawaii on 6 May 1987.
  54. George P. Fletcher, "[Unsound Constitution](#)," *The New Republic*, 23 June 1997, pages 14-15. For a good response to Fletcher's arguments, see Ron Paul's comments in the U.S. House of Representatives, [Congressional Record – House](#), 1 August 1997.
  55. Rawle, *View of the Constitution*, pages 15-16.
  56. Representative William Lemke, *Congressional Record – House*, 3 March 1934.
  57. James Traficant, Jr., *op. cit.*, 17 March 1993, page H 1303.
  58. *Black's Law Dictionary* (Sixth Edition), page 147.
  59. *Ibid.*
  60. *Op. cit.*, pages 245, 246.
  61. National Debt Clock, [http://www.brillig.com/debt\\_clock](http://www.brillig.com/debt_clock). For a shocking dose of reality, the reader is encouraged to go to this site and repeatedly hit the "refresh" button on his keyboard. As of this writing, the amount of the debt increases by increments of at least 100,000 "dollars" every two or three seconds and 1.5 billion every day.
  62. Niccolo Machiavelli, *The Prince and the Discourses* (New York: Random House, 1950), pages 18, 182-183.

Part Four:  
The Triumph of Democratic Socialism in the Twentieth Century

---

**CHAPTER TWENTY-FIVE:**  
**The Cold War in the United States**

**SUPPORTING DOCUMENT:**  
**The Declaration of Independence (Original Draft)**  
**June 1776**

**SUPPLEMENTARY ESSAY:**  
**An Essay on Constitutional Dictatorship**  
**by Clinton L. Rossiter**

A NARRATIVE  
OF  
THE GREAT REVIVAL  
WHICH PREVAILED  
IN THE SOUTHERN ARMIES  
DURING THE LATE CIVIL WAR BETWEEN THE STATES OF  
THE FEDERAL UNION.  
BY  
WILLIAM W. BENNETT, D.D.,  
SUPERINTENDENT OF "THE SOLDIERS' TRACT ASSOCIATION," AND CHAPLAIN IN  
THE CONFEDERATE ARMY.  
PHILADELPHIA:  
CLAXTON, REMSEN & HAFELFINGER,  
Nos. 624, 626 & 628 MARKET STREET.  
1877.

*"Thus it will be seen that among all classes in the armies of the South the element of true piety was found. The white man and the red man felt alike, that the cause in which they struggled was just and right, and that upon it they could invoke the blessing of God without doing violence to their conscience or their faith.*

*The early part of the war, without the blessing of deep and general revivals, was not barren of the fruits of righteousness in the lives, and the peace and glory of religion in the deaths of our soldiers. The scenes often witnessed by the humble cot of the dying patriot were abundant in proof that the gospel is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth."*

**William W. Bennett, A Narrative Of The Great Revival Which Prevalled In The Southern Armies During The Late Civil War (Philadelphia: Claxton, Remsen & Haffelfinger, 1877), 132-133.**

**WILLIAM W.  
BENNETT**

# *The Confederate Museum*

*Sponsored by:*

## *Sons of Confederate Veterans* *1896*

The time has come for us to step up our efforts toward the building of our Confederate Museum and new office building. At the GEC meeting on July 21, 2010 the GEC approved a new initiative to raise funds. There are three levels of donations/contributions. Each contributor will receive a pin designating them as a Founder of the Confederate Museum. Also in the Museum will be a list of names of all Founders. This can be a plaque on the wall or even names inscribed in brick depending on the construction design. Anyone can take part in this, they do not have to be an SCV member. Camps, Divisions, UDC chapters etc. can also take part.

Also donations can be made by multiple payments over a period of time. A form is being developed for Founders to list how they want their name listed. Those taking part will receive the form when it is finished. It will also then be available on the museum web site.



To make payment contact GHQ at 1-800-380-1896

Get the form [HERE](#)

### **Stonewall Jackson Level**



Contributors make a donation of at least \$1,000. If they are already a member of the Sesquicentennial Society, that contribution will be taken into account and the minimum contribution for them would be \$850. For some one who is not already a member they can get both for \$1050 with the \$50 dollars going to the Bicentennial Fund.

### **Robert E Lee Level**



Contribution of at least \$5,000. If not already a member of the Sesquicentennial Society it will be included as benefit of this level

### **Confederate Cabinet Level**



Contribution of at least \$10,000. If not already a member of the Sesquicentennial Society it will be included as benefit of this level

### **Additional**



GHQ has acquired 20 special gavels. These gavels are made from wood taken from the damn at Fredricksburg during the War. They are inscribed with the Sesquicentennial logo as well as the notation of the woods origin and comes with a statement of authenticity. The first 20 Camps or Division that contribute at the Stonewall Jackson level will receive one of these unique and valuable gavels.

This program got off to a resounding start. Several members have already become Stonewall Jackson level Founders. One Compatriot has even become a member of the Confederate Cabinet level Founders. Imagine that during the Bicentennial of the War for Southern Independence that your descendants can go to a museum where they can learn the truth about the Confederacy. Imagine also that they can look up on the wall of that museum and see your name and know that you did this for them.





**CLICK ON THESE  
LINKS:**



<a href="#">Home</a>
<a href="#">On Display</a>
<a href="#">Sesquicentennial Society</a>
<a href="#">Founders Program</a>
<a href="#">Links</a>

**Southern Born, Texas Proud!**

*"Learn About Your Heritage"*

*Sons of Confederate Veterans  
Texas Division*



## Texas Division

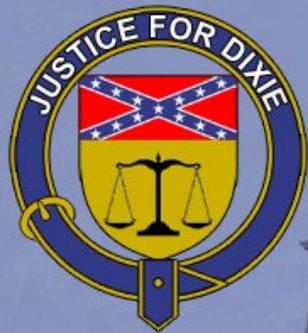
## Calendar

### Upcoming Schedule of Events

02/06/15 - 02/07/15	<u>2015 Stephen Dill Lee Institute</u>	Dallas, TX
02/14/15	<u>Camp 1848 Sweetheart Soiree</u>	Gainesville, TX
03/21/15	Camp 2129 New Marker Dedication	Madisonville, TX
06/05/15 - 06/07/15	<u>Texas Division 2015 Reunion</u>	Temple, TX
06/09/15 - 06/12/15	<u>Hood's Texas Brigade 2015 Tour</u>	Petersburg & Appomattox, VA

**Click on the event or on the calendar for more information.**





# Southern Legal Resource Center

Defending the rights of all Americans  
Advocating for the Confederate community

Follow Us

The Southern Legal Resource Center is a non-profit tax deductible public law and advocacy group dedicated to expanding the inalienable, legal, constitutional and civil rights of all Americans, but especially America's most persecuted minority: Confederate Southern Americans. **SLRC NEEDS OUR HELP !!!**

## Company Overview

Non-profit tax deductible public law corporation founded in 1995, dedicated to preservation of the dwindling rights of all Americans through judicial, legal and social advocacy on behalf of the Confederate community and Confederate Southern Americans.



## Mission

A return to social and constitutional sanity for all Americans and especially for America's most persecuted minority: Confederate Southern Americans.

Website <http://www.slrc-csa.org>

 [Donate](#)

 [Subscribe](#)

 [Become A Member](#)

 [Renew Membership](#)

**Southern Legal Resource  
Center  
P.O. Box 1235  
Black Mountain, NC 28711**

It is your liberty & Southern Heritage (and your children & grandchildren's liberty & heritage) we are fighting for.

**\$35 for Liberty & SLRC membership is a bargain.**

**Mail to: P.O.Box 1235 Black Mountain, NC 28711.**

Follow events on YouTube: ["All Things Confederate"](#)

Thank you,  
Kirk D. Lyons, Chief Trial Counsel

# Join SLRC Today!

# Sons of Confederate Veterans

"DEFENDING THEIR HONOR SINCE 1896"

[www.scv.org](http://www.scv.org) ★ 1-800-MySouth

## What is the Sons of Confederate Veterans?

The citizen-soldiers who fought for the Confederacy personified the best qualities of America. The preservation of liberty and freedom was the motivating factor in the South's decision to fight the Second American Revolution. The tenacity with which Confederate soldiers fought underscored their belief in the rights guaranteed by the Constitution. These attributes are the underpinning of our democratic society and represent the foundation on which this nation was built.

Today, the Sons of Confederate Veterans is preserving the history and legacy of these heroes, so future generations can understand the motives that animated the Southern Cause.

The SCV is the direct heir of the United Confederate Veterans, and the oldest hereditary organization for male descendants of Confederate soldiers. Organized at Richmond, Virginia in 1896, the SCV continues to serve as a historical, patriotic, and non-political organization dedicated to ensuring that a true history of the 1861-1865 period is preserved.

## Events & Functions

Memorial Services • Monthly Camp Meetings • Annual Reunions • Grave Site Restoration  
Educational Programs • Parades & Festivals • Heritage Defense • Honoring Our Veterans



Rattle Flag



1st National Flag



2nd National Flag



3rd National Flag



Bonnie Blue Flag



*They took a stand for us.  
Now, we stand for them.*

*May God bless our efforts to  
Vindicate the Cause of the  
Confederate South.*

Michael Givens  
Commander-in-Chief  
Sons of Confederate Veterans

**NEVER APOLOGIZE**



**FOR BEING RIGHT!**

### About our namesake:

[belo.herald@yahoo.com](mailto:belo.herald@yahoo.com)

Colonel A.H. Belo was from North Carolina, and participated in Pickett's Charge at Gettysburg. His troops were among the few to reach the stone wall. After the war, he moved to Texas, where he founded both the Galveston Herald and the Dallas Morning News. The Dallas Morning News was established in 1885 by the Galveston News as sort of a North Texas subsidiary. The two papers were linked by 315 miles of telegraph wire and shared a network of correspondents. They were the first two newspapers in the country to print simultaneous editions. The media empire he started now includes radio, publishing, and television. His impact on the early development of Dallas can hardly be overstated.

The Belo Camp 49 Websites and The Belo Herald are our unapologetic tributes to his efforts as we seek to bring the truth to our fellow Southrons and others in an age of political correctness and unrepentant yankee lies about our people, our culture, our heritage and our history. **Sic Semper Tyrannis!!!**

## Do you have an ancestor that was a Confederate Veteran?

Are you interested in honoring them and their cause?

Do you think that history should reflect the truth?

Are you interested in protecting your heritage and its symbols?

Will you commit to the vindication of the cause for which they fought?

If you answered "Yes" to these questions, then you should "Join Us"

*Membership in the Sons of Confederate Veterans is open to all male descendants of any veteran who served honorably in the Confederate armed forces regardless of the applicant's or his ancestor's race, religion, or political views.*

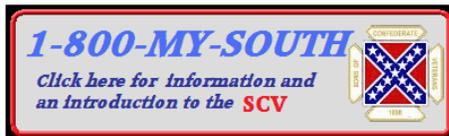
## How Do I Join The Sons of Confederate Veterans?



The SCV is the direct heir of the United Confederate Veterans, and the oldest hereditary organization for male descendants of Confederate soldiers. Organized at Richmond, Virginia in 1896, the SCV continues to serve as a historical, patriotic, and non-political organization dedicated to ensuring that a true history of the 1861-1865 period is preserved.



*Membership in the Sons of Confederate Veterans is open to all male descendants of any veteran who served honorably in the Confederate States armed forces and government.*



Membership can be obtained through either lineal or collateral family lines and kinship to a veteran must be **documented genealogically**. The minimum age for full membership is 12, but there is no minimum for Cadet Membership.

<http://www.scv.org/research/genealogy.php>

### CHARGE TO THE SONS OF CONFEDERATE VETERANS

*"To you, Sons of Confederate Veterans, we will commit the vindication of the cause for which we fought. To your strength will be given the defense of the Confederate soldier's good name, the guardianship of his history, the emulation of his virtues, the perpetuation of those principles which he loved and which you love also, and those ideals which made him glorious and which you also cherish." Remember it is your duty to see that the true history of the South is presented to future generations".*

Lt. General Stephen Dill Lee,  
Commander General

NOTE: In accordance with Title 17 U.S.C. section 107, any copyrighted material herein is distributed without profit or payment to those who have expressed prior interest in receiving this information for non-profit research and educational purposes only. For further information please refer to:

<http://www.law.cornell.edu/uscode/17/107.shtml>